

Measuring Harassment of Abused Women:
A Nursing Concern

By

Daniel J. Sheridan

A Dissertation

Presented to
Oregon Health Sciences University
School of Nursing
in partial fulfillment
of the requirements for the degree of
Doctor of Philosophy

January 15, 1998

APPROVED:

[Redacted Signature]

Margaret A. Imle, RN, PhD., Associate Professor, Research Advisor

[Redacted Signature]

Mary Ann Curly, RN, DNSc, FAAN, WHCNP, Professor, Committee Member

[Redacted Signature]

Jacquelyn Campbell, RN, PhD, FAAN, Professor, Committee Member

[Redacted Signature]

Kathleen M. Potempa, RN, DNSc, FAAN, Dean, School of Nursing

ACKNOWLEDGMENT OF FINANCIAL SUPPORT

This dissertation research was funded in part by the National Institute for Nursing Research, NIH, as an Institutional National Research Service Award (5P32NR07061-04) and an Individual National Research Service Award (1F31NR06926-01).

ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This dissertation is testimony to the perseverance and patience of many people. First, I would like to thank my dissertation advisor, Margaret A. Imle, RN, PhD, for her belief that I could and would complete the doctoral education process at Oregon Health Sciences University (OHSU) School of Nursing. Her holistic nursing understanding of the struggles that can occur as one balances student growth and responsibilities with individual and family needs was essential throughout my program of study.

I would also like to thank the other members of my dissertation committee. Mary Ann Curry, RN, DNSc, was acutely perceptive in knowing those times when I needed a little or a lot of prodding to progress. She modeled how to set tough professional limits. Jacquelyn C. Campbell, RN, PhD, FAAN, has been my friend and mentor for over a decade. Dr. Campbell's expertise and commitment to ending violence against women is world renowned. I am proud to be one of the many students she has unselfishly helped to become more expert in this field. Dr. Linda Robrecht helped me look beyond abuser behaviors to examine how abused women describe their journeys within the process of leaving abusive relationships.

Many other people at OHSU were instrumental in my progress at various times. I would especially like to thank Drs. Virginia Tilden and Barbara Limandri for their multiple efforts to advise and mentor me. Dean Carol Lindeman has a special place in my heart as well Drs. Sheila Kodadek, Chris Tanner, Peg Von Dreele and Marilee Donovan.

Dr. Leslie McBride from Portland State University gave me major support as I completed my minor and always with a smile. Many fellow doctoral students and faculty with whom I studied all contributed in my journey to completion.

I am grateful to all past and present members of the Nursing Research Consortium on Violence and Abuse (NRCVA) who served as mentors and an unwavering source of encouragement. I would like to thank NRVCA members Drs. Jacquelyn Campbell, Christine King and Josephine Ryan for believing enough in the 45-item pilot HARASS measure to include it in their studies with abused women.

I would like to give a special thanks my wife, Margaret Ann Jozsa, the person most patient with me and who persevered in her belief in me through all of my procrastination and periods of ambivalence. Her support and that of my children, David and Nicholas, was appreciated more than I can ever acknowledge. I would like to thank my mother, Veronica R. Sheridan, for instilling in me the belief that I could do anything if I stick to it. My father, the late Edward E. Sheridan, was never afraid to work hard. Thankfully that trait was passed onto to me. Finally, I would to thank the abused women who took a few minutes of their precious time to share their experiences with harassment from abusive male partners.

ABSTRACT

TITLE: Measuring Harassment of Abused Women: A Nursing Concern

AUTHOR: Daniel J. Sheridan

APPROVED: [REDACTED]
Margaret A. Imle, RN, PhD, Associate Professor, Research Advisor

The purpose of this dissertation was to develop and refine a measure of harassment of abused women by intimate male partners. This study addressed three research questions: What is the reliability and validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS (Harassment in Abusive Relationships: A Self-report Scale) measure? What is the fewest number of items that support the reliability and validity of the HARASS measure? Does the 45-item pilot HARASS measure and/or a refined version of the HARASS measure fit within a Power and Control Model? The 45-item pilot HARASS tool, with its OFTEN and DISTRESS subscales, was used with measures of abuse and dangerousness in two studies by other researchers (Campbell, 1997; King & Ryan, 1997). The data from these secondary data sources were combined by this researcher to do psychometric testing on the HARASS tool. Campbell's participants were 93 predominantly African-American, community-based women in a Midwestern city. Campbell had included the 45-item pilot HARASS measure in her study to determine its relationship with scores on the Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA) and the Danger Assessment (DA). King and Ryan's participants were 51 predominantly Caucasian women recruited from domestic violence emergency shelters along the mid-Atlantic coast. The 45-item pilot HARASS measure and the ISA

tool was used to explore their relationship with healthcare-seeking behaviors among emergency shelter-based women who were seeking health services related to being in abusive relationships. Cronbach's alphas on the 45-item pilot HARASS measure ranged from .90 to .96 on the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales within all samples and cases (abused and nonabused) indicating item redundancy. Cronbach's alphas for the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales on the 23-item reduced HARASS tool ranged from .89 to .92. The 45-item pilot HARASS and the 23-item reduced HARASS measures had evidence of content, convergent construct, and contrasted group validity. The correlations among all measures used in Campbell's (1997) and King and Ryan's (1997) studies were examined for the combined samples, then separately for Campbell's sample and for King and Ryan's sample. Theoretically expected moderate (yet not redundant) positive correlations between the HARASS tool, the ISA and DA were found in the various correlations. An exploratory, principal components, rotated factor analysis loaded the 23-item reduced HARASS tool into three preliminary subscale groupings. These groupings had logical support in the literature and were named: (a) stalking-like behaviors, (b) threatening behaviors, and (c) controlling his commodities—behaviors that affect children, property, and forced sex. A forced factor analysis failed to sort items from either HARASS tool into the eight categories identified in the Power and Control model. Findings of this study provide preliminary support for the reliability and validity of the measure of harassment of abused women in the process of leaving their abusive male partners.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

| <u>Chapter</u> | | <u>Page</u> |
|----------------|--|-------------|
| I | INTRODUCTION | 1 |
| | Abuse of Women | 2 |
| | Significance to Nursing | 3 |
| II | REVIEW OF LITERATURE AND THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK | 4 |
| | Definitions of Abuse | 5 |
| | Psychological Abuse of Women in Intimate Relationships | 6 |
| | Evolution of the Concept of Psychological Abuse | 6 |
| | Defining Psychological Abuse | 7 |
| | Feminist Definitions of Abuse | 9 |
| | Court-Determined Definitions of Psychological Abuse | 10 |
| | Similarities Between Brainwashing, Mind Control, and Cultic Behaviors | 12 |
| | The Stockholm Syndrome: Bonding With Your Captor | 15 |
| | Traumatic Bonding: Intermittent Good-Bad Behavior | 16 |
| | Active Recapture Measures | 17 |
| | Control by Devaluing and Leveling | 19 |

| <u>Chapter</u> | <u>Page</u> |
|--|-------------|
| II (Continued) | |
| Recognizing and Naming the Violence | 20 |
| Regaining Personal Integrity | 21 |
| Entrapment and Recovery in Abusive Relationships | 21 |
| Termination Readiness | 23 |
| Reclaiming Themselves | 24 |
| Reaching Full Potential as Women | 24 |
| Further Study of the Process of Leaving Needed | 24 |
| Competing Perspectives of Physical and Psychological Abuse | 25 |
| The Family Violence Perspective | 26 |
| The Feminist Perspective | 27 |
| The Psychopathology Perspective | 28 |
| Summary | 30 |
| Measures of Abuse | 31 |
| Conflict Tactics Scale | 32 |
| Index of Spouse Abuse | 34 |
| Danger Assessment | 36 |
| Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory | 40 |
| Partner Abuse Scales: Physical and Nonphysical | 40 |

| <u>Chapter</u> | <u>Page</u> |
|---|-------------|
| II Measures of Abuse (Continued) | |
| Severity of Violence Against Women Scale | 41 |
| Abusive Behavior Inventory | 42 |
| Measure of Wife Abuse | 42 |
| Summary | 43 |
| Abuser Literature Review | 45 |
| Studies from the Psychopathologic Paradigm | 45 |
| Studies from a Learned Social Behavior Paradigm | 50 |
| Study from a Sociologic-Feminist Paradigm | 52 |
| Summary | 53 |
| Homicide Issues | 54 |
| Epidemiologic Attempts to Quantify Domestic Homicide | 56 |
| Cross-Cultural Epidemiologic Studies of Domestic Homicide | 58 |
| “If I Can’t Have You, No One Can” | 61 |
| Self-Defense by Battered Women | 67 |
| Summary | 69 |
| Developing a Conceptual Framework and Measure of Harassment | 69 |
| Gaps of Existing Measures in Measuring Patterns of Interrelated Types of Abuse | 70 |
| Lack of Lethality Assessment in Measures | 72 |

| <u>Chapter</u> | | <u>Page</u> |
|----------------|---|-------------|
| II | Developing a Conceptual Framework and Measure of Harassment Continued) | |
| | Harassment While Leaving Abusive Relationships | 72 |
| | Prior Work by This Researcher | 74 |
| | Qualitative Evaluation of HARASS | 75 |
| | Harassment Within a Power and Control Framework | 76 |
| | Chapter Summary | 81 |
| III | METHODS AND PSYCHOMETRIC FINDINGS | 83 |
| | Design of Present Study | 84 |
| | Data Collection Instruments | 85 |
| | The ISA and DA Measures | 85 |
| | Developing the Concept of Harassment | 85 |
| | Draft HARASS Tool Development and Pilot Testing | 86 |
| | Item Construction and Response Categories | 87 |
| | Respondent Instructions and Definitions | 89 |
| | Summary | 90 |
| | Sample Description | 91 |
| | Protection of Human Study Participants | 92 |

| <u>Chapter</u> | <u>Page</u> |
|---|-------------|
| III (Continued) | |
| Data Management | 92 |
| Merging and Creating Present Study Data Files | 92 |
| Conducting t Tests for Equality of Means on Demographic Variables | 95 |
| Cross Tabulations on Collapsed Demographic Data ... | 96 |
| Summary | 97 |
| Data Analysis | 98 |
| Research Question 1 | 106 |
| Reliability | 106 |
| Validity | 111 |
| Construct Validity | 111 |
| Factor Analysis | 121 |
| Contrasted Groups Approach to Validity | 122 |
| Summary | 123 |
| Research Question 2 | 124 |
| Statistical Redundancy | 124 |
| Item Performance | 131 |
| Lack of Fit Within the Construct of Harassment While Leaving Abusive Relationships | 132 |
| Deletion of Conceptually Redundant Items | 134 |

| <u>Chapter</u> | <u>Page</u> |
|----------------|--|
| III | Data Analysis (Continued) |
| | Research Question 2 (Continued) |
| | Factor Analysis and Resulting Reliability of a Reduced Set of Items 136 |
| | Convergent Construct Validity of a 23-Item Reduced HARASS Tool 143 |
| | Summary 153 |
| | Contrasted Groups Approach to Validity 153 |
| | Summary 155 |
| | Research Question 3 159 |
| | Confirmatory Factor Analysis of 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure Items Into Power and Control Model Categories 160 |
| | Theoretical Fit of HARASS Items With Power and Control Model 161 |
| | Chapter Summary 162 |
| IV | DISCUSSION OF FINDINGS 164 |
| | Design of Present Study 164 |
| | Combining the Data 165 |
| | Strengths and Weaknesses of Using Secondary Data 166 |

| <u>Chapter</u> | <u>Page</u> |
|---|-------------|
| IV (Continued) | |
| Sample Description | 168 |
| Data Collection Instruments | 174 |
| Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA) | 174 |
| Danger Assessment (DA) | 177 |
| Summary | 180 |
| Research Question 1 | 181 |
| Research Question 2 | 183 |
| Research Question 3 | 186 |
| Using a Planned Series of Studies for Psychometric Purposes | 187 |
| Pretesting the 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure | 188 |
| Development of a 23-Item Redesigned HARASS Measure | 189 |
| Chapter Summary | 192 |
| V IMPLICATIONS FOR RESEARCH, PRACTICE, AND FURTHER TESTING OF THE 23-ITEM HARASS MEASURES | 194 |
| Future Psychometric Testing | 194 |
| Follow-up Pilot Testing of the 23-Item HARASS | 194 |
| Reliability | 197 |
| Validity | 200 |
| Reading level of Future HARASS Measures | 202 |

| <u>Chapter</u> | <u>Page</u> |
|----------------|---|
| IV | Future Psychometric Testing (Continued) |
| | Self-Report Versus Administered Tool 202 |
| | Controlling for Social Desirability 202 |
| | Nursing Samples 203 |
| | Clinical Implications of Measure of HARASS 205 |
| | Using HARASS Outside of Nursing 206 |
| | Nursing Theory 207 |
| | Expanding Nursing Research to Others in Abusive Intimate Relationships 209 |
| | Harassment in the Work Place 209 |
| | Chapter Summary 210 |
| | Dissertation Summary 210 |
| | REFERENCES 212 |
| APPENDICES | |
| A | Power and Control Wheel 226 |
| B | Conflict Tactics Scale (CTS): Husband–Wife Form N 228 |
| C | Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA) 230 |
| D | Danger Assessment (DA) 233 |
| E | Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (PMWI) 236 |

| | | |
|---|---|-----|
| F | Partner Abuse Scale: Physical (PSAP) | 239 |
| G | Partner Abuse Scale: Nonphysical (PASNP) | 241 |
| H | Severity of Violence Against Women Scales (SVAWS) | 243 |
| I | Abusive Behavior Inventory (ABI) | 247 |
| J | Measure of Wife Abuse (MWA) | 250 |
| K | 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure (HARASS) | 254 |
| L | Summary of Campbell's (1997) <i>Women's Response To Battering–Time 3</i> Study Used In The Secondary Data Analysis for This Dissertation | 261 |
| M | Summary of King and Ryan's (1997) <i>A Study of the Health Care Needs and Experiences of Abused Women</i> Used in the Secondary Data Analysis for This Dessertation | 264 |
| N | 54-Item HARASS Measure | 266 |
| O | Wayne State University Institutional Approval for Campbell's Study | 270 |
| P | University of Massachusetts, Amherst Institutional Approval for King and Ryan's Study | 275 |
| Q | OHSU IRB Memo Exempting Dissertation Study from Full Institutional Review | 280 |
| R | 23-Item Redesigned HARASS Measure | 282 |
| S | The Role of Women in the Cycle of Leaving: Qualitative Findings From Women Experiencing Harassment in the Process of Leaving Abusive Relationships | 287 |
| T | 23-Item Redesigned HARASS Measure With Modified Pronouns for Use With Abused Lesbians or Battered Men .. | 293 |

LIST OF TABLES

| <u>Table</u> | | <u>Page</u> |
|--------------|--|-------------|
| 1 | NiCarthy's (1986) Selected Criteria for Physical, Sexual, and Emotional Abuse by a Male Intimate Partner | 11 |
| 2 | Seven Measures of Intimate Partner Abuse: Identified Subscales | 32 |
| 3 | Controlling/Isolating Subscale Items From the Index of Spouse Abuse With Poor African-American Women (Campbell et al., 1994) | 36 |
| 4 | Abuser Typologies | 47 |
| 5 | Sort of 45-Item HARASS by Eight Categories Within the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) | 78 |
| 6 | Demographic Comparison of Women by Source | 94 |
| 7 | Comparison of Campbell's (1997) and King and Ryan's (1997) Combined Samples | 99 |
| 8 | Comparison of Campbell's (1997) and King and Ryan's (1997) Samples: Only Women Currently Abused | 102 |
| 9 | Cronbach's Alpha Coefficient Reliability Scores Between All Study Measures | 108 |
| 10 | 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure, Combined Sample – All Cases | 114 |
| 11 | 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: Combined Sample, Abused Cases – Correlations With Other Scales | 115 |
| 12 | 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: Campbell's (1997) Abused Cases – Correlations With Other Scale | 116 |

| <u>Table</u> | <u>Page</u> |
|---|-------------|
| 13 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: All of Campbell's (1997) Cases – Correlations With Other Scales | 118 |
| 14 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: King and Ryan's (1997) Total Sample – Correlations With Other Scales | 119 |
| 15 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: King and Ryan's (1997) Abused Sample – Correlations With Other Scales | 120 |
| 16 Item Performance of Individual Items in the 45-Item HARASS OFTEN Scale With Combined Samples | 127 |
| 17 Varimax Rotated Factor Loadings of 23-Item HARASS Forced into Three Factors With Preliminary Subscale Identification | 137 |
| 18 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: Item Numbers of Those Deleted or Retained | 142 |
| 19 23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure | 144 |
| 20 23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: Combined Samples, All Cases – Correlations With Other Scales | 146 |
| 21 23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: All Campbell's (1997) Cases – Correlations With Other Scales | 147 |
| 22 23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: Combined Samples, Abused Cases – Correlations With Other Scales | 149 |
| 23 23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: Cambell's (1997) Abused Cases – Correlations With Other Scales | 150 |
| 24 23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: King and Ryan's (1997) Total Sample – Correlations With Other Scales | 151 |
| 25 23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: King and Ryan's (1997) Abused Sample – Correlations With Other Scales | 152 |

| <u>Table</u> | | <u>Page</u> |
|--------------|---|-------------|
| 26 | Item Performance of Individual Items in the 45-Item HARASS OFTEN Scale With Combined Samples | 156 |
| 27 | Item–Total Performance 23-Item HARASS DISTRESS Scale (<u>n</u> = 90) | 158 |

CHAPTER I

INTRODUCTION

Each year millions of battered women in the United States experience ongoing physical, psychological, sexual, and financial violence from abusive male intimate partners. For many women, the abuse may change and escalate when they attempt to leave the abusive relationship. For thousands of battered women, leaving the abusive relationship is marked by increased harassment and danger. Tragically, for about two thousand women every year, leaving an abusive relationship results in their death and sometimes the deaths of their children at the hands of their abusive male partner (Campbell, 1992; Wilson & Daly, 1993; Wilson, Daly, & Daniele, 1995).

While criminal case law and clinical data show an association between women leaving abusive relationships, increased harassment from abusive males, and homicide of either the women or their abusers, little empirical data exist linking these processes. Efforts to document and measure danger or homicide risk markers are ongoing (Campbell, 1981, 1986, 1992, 1995); however, there have been no empirical efforts to quantify harassment of battered women, a stage of abuse that precedes danger of homicide. In order to explore this link, a reliable and valid measure of harassment was needed. The purpose of this dissertation was to develop and refine a measure of harassment of abused women by intimate male partners. Guiding this dissertation were

the feminist principles that at the root of intimate partner abuse are issues of power and control (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993).

Abuse of Women

The battered women's movement originally conceptualized domestic violence as a social, public policy, and criminal justice concern (Loving, 1980; Pizzey & Shapiro, 1982; Roy, 1977; U.S. Commission on Civil Rights, 1978; Walker, 1979), a view still strongly supported by many (Buzawa & Buzawa, 1990; Edwards, 1989). Early in the battered women's movement, however, a few nurse visionaries recognized abuse of women as a major health issue (Drake, 1982; Lichenstein, 1981; Lieberknecht, 1978; Parker & Schumacher, 1977).

Over the past 20 years, as clinical and research articles on the health consequences of abused women have begun to proliferate in the nursing, medical, and allied health literature, domestic violence has come to be viewed as a major public health concern. Nevertheless, only a handful of nurses have examined the health link between abuse, domestic homicide, and the role of clinical forensics despite growing documentation of the seriousness of physical, psychological, and sexual domestic violence (Campbell, 1981, 1986, 1992; Grant, 1995; Sheridan, 1993, 1995, 1996). Other nurses have been at the forefront of clinical research on the process women go through to leave abusive relationships (Campbell, 1981, 1986, 1992; Fishwick, 1993; Landenburger, 1989, 1993; May, 1990; Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995, Ulrich, 1991, 1993). Building on Campbell's (1981, 1986, 1992) prior work about the process of

leaving abusive relationships and assessing for the danger of homicide, a primary assumption of this study is that battered women who are in the process of leaving abusive relationships experience a pattern of behaviors by abusive males that this study has labeled as harassment. A secondary assumption of this study is that these harassing behaviors can be quantified and measured.

Significance to Nursing

The ability to measure harassment of battered women in relationships with violent male intimates should help nurses and other providers to better identify which women are at greater risk for increased physical, psychological, sexual, and economic abuse and also at greater risk for homicide, either of themselves or of their abusive partners. The ability to measure harassment of battered women leaving abusive relationships may be especially critical in future research efforts that explore the links between leaving abusive relationships, increased harassment, and domestic homicide. The immediate goal of this research was the creation of a reliable and valid measure of harassment. The long-term goal of this research is to continue to refine this tool for use in varied clinical and research settings so that nurses, other service providers, and researchers can better identify which battered women are at risk for increased harassment and may consequently progress toward greater abuse or death by homicide. With improved identification of harassment, abused women can receive nursing interventions designed to reduce harassment levels and thereby the risk of exposure to increased danger and lethality potential.

CHAPTER II

REVIEW OF LITERATURE AND THEORETICAL FRAMEWORK

This chapter presents definitions of abuse and a review of the literature related to domestic assault with an emphasis on efforts to understand and measure psychological and nonphysical abuse. A detailed discussion of barriers to leaving abusive relationships experienced by battered women is presented. Included in this discussion of barriers are the concepts of power and control (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993); brainwashing, mind control, and active recapture techniques (Boulette & Andersen, 1985); the Stockholm Syndrome (Graham & Rawlings, 1991; Graham, Rawlings, & Rimini, 1988); and traumatic bonding (Dutton & Painter, 1981, 1993).

Literature on the process of leaving abusive relationships is reviewed as well as prior research on the behavioral characteristics of abusers. The literature on psychological abuse and understanding abuser behavior appears to come from one of three, at times competing, perspectives: (a) sociological (Gelles, 1974; Johnson, 1995; Straus, 1979; Straus & Gelles, 1986); (b) psychopathological (Dutton, 1988; Dutton & Painter, 1981, 1993; Dutton & Starzomski, 1993) and (c) feminist (Campbell, 1981, 1992; Dobash & Dobash, 1979, 1992; NiCarthy, 1982, 1986; Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993). Seven instruments that tap the domain of psychological abuse are reviewed, including a discussion of the conceptual gaps of these tools that, for example, do not

address patterns of escalating abuse, especially for women who are attempting to leave abusive relationships. An extensive review of the domestic homicide literature that unequivocally links, clinically, the relationship between leaving abusive relationships, increased harassment, and homicide risk within a feminist theoretical framework completes the chapter.

Definitions of Abuse

Early research efforts describing the incidence of female partner abuse were primarily focused on physical and, sometimes, sexual assault (Campbell, 1989a, 1989b; Campbell & Fishwick, 1993; Finkelhor & Yllo, 1982; Pagelow, 1981; Russell, 1982; Straus & Gelles, 1986). In fact, to be counted as a survivor of intimate partner abuse, a woman usually needed to have been physically assaulted on at least two or more occasions (Drake, 1982; Parker & Schumacher, 1977; Walker, 1979). For research purposes, even Walker (1979), one of the most noted domestic violence scholars, defined a battered woman as one who had gone through an abuse cycle at least twice. Campbell and Fishwick (1993), in the classic nursing textbook on family violence, defined wife abuse as a pattern of “deliberate and repeated physical aggression or sexual assault inflicted on a woman by a man with whom she has or has had an intimate relationship” (p. 69).

Throughout the domestic violence literature the gender-specific terms “wife abuse,” “battered woman,” “woman abuse,” and “abuse of female partners” are used interchangeably; they refer to women who are married, unmarried, separated, and/or

divorced who are being physically assaulted by a current or former intimate partner, usually a male. Gender-neutral terms such as “spouse abuse,” “domestic violence,” and “conjugal violence,” are also used often in the literature; however, such terms may imply erroneously that violence is exhibited equally by both partners in a heterosexual relationship (Berk, Berk, Loseke, & Rauma, 1983; Saunders, 1986).

Throughout this paper, the terms intimate partner abuse, women abuse, domestic violence, abused women, and battered women will be used interchangeably. The operational definition of women abuse most consistent with this author’s clinical and research experience includes any combination of physically, emotionally, sexually, and or financially hurtful and/or threatening behaviors by male intimates that attempt to control women.

Psychological Abuse of Women in Intimate Relationships

While tools to measure physical abuse were being developed and had been reported on in the research literature, there was a growing awareness in the clinical literature that domestic violence included more than just physical abuse. This awareness led to the development of research measures of psychological abuse.

Evolution of the Concept of Psychological Abuse

Walker (1979) identified that domestic violence went far beyond physical violence to include psychological and sexual abuse noting: "Battered women themselves are the best judges of whether or not they are being battered" (p. xiv). In fact, Walker discovered that if battered women were to err, it was on the side of

under-recognizing and under-reporting the abuse in their lives. In her historical, multi-cultural review of abused women, Thompson (1989) said quite succinctly, "The history of domestic violence is a study of physical violence" (p. 28). Thus, because historical accounts of injury to women speak only of physical injury, the scars of psychological abuse tend to remain noticeably invisible in oral and written histories.

Many domestic violence experts report that battered women cite psychological abuse as more pervasive, more painful, and as resulting in more long-term damage than does physical abuse (Fortune & Horman, 1981; Pagelow, 1984; Roy, 1977; Thompson, 1989; Walker, 1979, 1984, 1989). The need to more accurately measure psychological abuse has been identified by many scholars in the field (Campbell, 1984; Campbell & Fishwick, 1993; Gondolf, 1988; Hudson & McIntosh, 1981; Sugarman & Hotaling, 1989; Walker, 1984; Yllo, 1988).

Defining Psychological Abuse

How does one quantify, measure, record, document, and/or compare pain from physical and sexual violence to pain from psychological violence? Physical abuse is much easier to quantify than psychological abuse. Bruises, lacerations, cuts, and abrasions can be measured, photographed and counted. Broken bones look dramatic on x-ray film. Likewise, penetrating injuries from firearms and knives often mandate legal notification and intervention; and forensic experts have made a science of studying traumatic knife and bullet wounds. Conversely, it is much more difficult to measure the size of a threat or an emotional wound. Similarly, it is impossible to

photograph a batterer's efforts to control "his woman" by intimidation, humiliation, and manipulation.

Before any measurements of psychological abuse or comparisons between types of abuse can be made, one must first have an operational definition of the components of psychological abuse (Campbell, 1984; Walker, 1984). Several scholars have posed definitions. Walker (1979) did not define psychological abuse apart from physical abuse, as her research indicated that they occurred inseparably in abusive relationships. Therefore, her operational definition of woman abuse included repeated "forceful physical or psychological behavior by a man in order to coerce her to do something he wants her to do without any concern for her rights" (p. xv).

Various definitions of domestic violence and psychological abuse overlap and include dimensions of physical harm (Drake, 1982; Fortune & Horman, 1981; Sonkin, 1995; Thompson, 1989; Walker, 1979); emotional harm (Fortune & Horman, 1981; Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993; Sonkin, 1995; Thompson, 1989; Walker, 1979); sexual harm (Fortune & Horman, 1981; Sonkin, 1995; Thompson, 1989); economic abuse (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993); destruction of personal property and pets (Fortune & Horman, 1981; Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993); coercion/threats of harm (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993; Sonkin, Martin, & Walker, 1985); pathologic jealousy (Sonkin, Martin, & Walker, 1985); isolating behaviors (Sonkin, Martin, & Walker, 1985; Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993); manipulation (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993); and efforts to control behaviors and abuse power (Sonkin, Martin, & Walker, 1985; Pence &

Paymar, 1986, 1993; Siegal, Plessner, & Jacobs, 1985; Thompson, 1989). Regardless of the source and definition chosen, the intent of most domestic violence appears to be control of the woman by the abusive male partner.

Feminist Definitions of Abuse

Pence and Paymar (1986, 1993) argue that control and a power imbalance perpetuate abuse of women by men. Their feminist conceptualization of abuser behaviors, most often referred to as the Duluth Model, is often diagrammed in a Power and Control Wheel (see Appendix A). Within this model, abusive males consciously use eight tactics to exert power and control over women: male privilege; isolation; economic abuse; emotional abuse; use of the children; intimidation; coercion and threats; and minimizing, denying, and blaming (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993).

For example, early in the relationship the abuser will use male privilege to define sex role behaviors within the relationship that establish him as the head of the household with all major decision-making power. The woman is given token power and often treated as his servant. Over time, he begins to isolate the woman from her family and friends, often controlling who she sees, what she reads, and what she is allowed to discuss. Jealousy is often used as justification for these isolating actions. The woman has little control over household finances. She may be forced to work, forced not to work, and/or not allowed any unsupervised access to family monies. Gradually, the woman begins to endure from her abuser increased verbal put downs, emotional abuse, and crazy-making behaviors. The abuser may use the children as

pawns and/or threaten the children. Intimidation and fear tactics are often used by the abuser including destroying property, harming pets, and displaying weapons. The woman is often threatened or coerced to do things against her will. In addition, the abuser often threatens to harm himself if she leaves him. Throughout this process, the abuser blames her for the abuse and minimizes how seriously he physically and emotionally hurts her (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993).

The lay feminist literature on abuse is increasing as public awareness of domestic violence increases. Rather than providing succinct definitions of domestic violence in her self-help books for battered women survivors, NiCarthy (1982, 1986) opted to include a series of questions about physical, emotional, and sexual abuse for women to ask themselves about their relationships with intimate male partners (see Table 1). She instructed her readers that if they had been hurt in any way even once, the relationship is abusive and the violence would always escalate.

Court-Determined Definitions of Psychological Abuse

Conversely, Sonkin (1995) refined the definition of abuse developed from within the professionally trained battered women's service network, to differentiate the habitual abuser from the nonhabitual abuser. Sonkin indicated that what separates the nonabusive males who, on occasion in anger, may exhibit a specific behavior listed in a measure of psychological abuse from truly abusive males is the pattern of extremeness, frequency, and consistency of the abusive behaviors. Further, Sonkin recommended that clinicians working with abusive males, especially court-mandated

Table 1

NiCarthy's (1986) Selected Criteria for Physical, Sexual, and Emotional Abuse by a Male Intimate Partner

- Ignores her feelings
 - Puts down women as a group
 - Puts down her beliefs, religion, race, or class
 - Withholds appreciation, affection, and attention in order to punish her
 - Criticizes her, calls her names, shouts at her
 - Embarrasses her in public and in private
 - Makes fun of her friends and family
 - Keeps her from working
 - Controls the money
 - Harasses her about imagined affairs
 - Hurts family pets
 - Manipulates her with lies and contradictions
 - Threatens to hurt her, her family, and/or her friends
 - Threatens to leave her
 - Throws her out of the home
 - Brags about his affairs with other people
 - Threatens to kidnap the children if she leaves
 - Takes out his anger at her on the children
-

Note. Adapted from *Getting Free: A Handbook for Women in Abusive Relationships*, by G. NiCarthy, 1986, Seattle, WA: Seal Press.

batterers, use "the more narrow, crime-specific definitions of psychological violence (threats, harassing, stalking, etc.)" (p. 28). Sonkin advocated, however, that the more general forms of psychological abuse, such as using male privilege and name calling, be used in psycho-educational forums. He did not specify which definition was best for clinical and/or empirical research. However, from this researcher's clinical experience, battered women survivors most often define abuse as a pattern of hurtful behaviors.

Similarities Between Brainwashing, Mind Control and Cultic Behaviors

Sonkin (1995) and many others have contrasted psychological abuse in domestic violence with brainwashing of war and political prisoners (Fortune and Horman, 1981; NiCarthy, 1986; Russell, 1982; Thompson, 1989; Tolman, 1989; Walker, 1984). An Amnesty International Publication, *Report on Torture* (1973), included Biderman's (1964) Chart of Coercion, that depicts eight brainwashing techniques that have been used on prisoners of war and political prisoners: isolation, monopolization of perception, induced debility and exhaustion, threats, occasional indulgences, degradation, demonstrating omnipotence, and enforcing trivial demands.

Boulette and Andersen (1985), based on decades of clinical counseling experience, believe that cult members and battered women experience similar forms of brainwashing and mind control and share many common characteristics. Using parallels from cultic mind control and brainwashing techniques, they hypothesized that women often become trapped in abusive relationships (Boulette & Andersen,

1985). They describe cultic systems as totalistic and demanding degrees of extreme control over individual freedom through various degrees of psychologically coercive and deceptive behaviors including social isolation, confusion and guilt, threats of harm, love with strings attached, lying, and distortions of reality (Boulette & Andersen, 1985).

Battering that includes mind control, according to Boulette and Andersen (1985) includes early verbal and/or physical dominance that can begin during or shortly after the courtship phase. Over time, the batterer emotionally and geographically isolates and sometimes literally imprisons the woman, cutting her off from contact with family and friends. During this process, the batterer weakens the woman's access to a support network, minimizes her escape options, and fosters the development of a partner who is more docile and behaviorally malleable. To enforce this process, the abusive male will use fear arousal and maintenance techniques that include actual and verbal threats of physical harm, direct threats with weapons, humiliation, public embarrassment, and fear (Boulette & Andersen, 1985).

The women are blamed so often by the abusive males for causing the violent and coercive behaviors that the women begin to self-blame. This induction of guilt by the battering male towards the woman is occasionally softened by his contingent expressions of love. If she does not adequately acknowledge his love of her, he continues to degrade, devalue, and malign her until she capitulates (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). The abusive male is often jealous, accusing the woman of infidelity

while often, blatantly flaunting his promiscuity. The problems being experienced within these violent relationships and dysfunctional families are expected to be kept secret at all costs. To break the family secret has been accompanied by the abusive male's threats of increased or lethal harm (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). To compensate for the cognitive dissonance resulting from experiencing the above behaviors, many battered women develop an enforced loyalty to the abusive male partners, exaggerating the socially acceptable behaviors and verbalizing a need to change and rescue the men from their violent actions (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). Women have described this behavioral pattern as cyclic and noted that it could lead to feelings of powerlessness and helplessness (Boulette & Andersen, 1985; Walker, 1979) that fluctuate with time periods when women are given hope-instilling behaviors by the abusers. The abusers temporarily modify their behavior so that the women believe there is hope that the violence, threats, manipulations, and isolation will eventually end (Boulette & Andersen, 1985).

The brainwashing of battered women, whether conceptualized as that of a prisoner of war or as a cult member, often occurs insidiously over an extended period of time. This gradual process provides a partial explanation for the difficulty some battered women have to objectively assess the severe levels of abuse and danger and to question their capability of leaving their abusers. However, these techniques are less explanatory for those battered women who begin experiencing severe physical, sexual, and psychological abuse very early in the intimate relationship before brainwashing

occurs. An often asked question is, “Why don't those women just leave?” Two very related models have been used to explain this phenomenon: the Stockholm Syndrome (Graham et al., 1988) and the Traumatic Bonding (Dutton & Painter, 1981, 1993) models.

The Stockholm Syndrome: Bonding With Your Captor

The Stockholm Syndrome attempts to explain the seemingly paradoxical response of some hostages to their captors. First attributed to a hostage situation in a bank in Stockholm, and subsequently identified in multiple hostage and kidnaping situations, hostages sometimes develop a significant fondness and attraction to their captors. The Stockholm Syndrome (Graham et al., 1988) is characterized by four conditions:

1. The captor threatens and has the capacity to kill the captive;
2. The captive cannot safely escape; therefore, he or she is totally dependent on the captor;
3. The captive is isolated from contact with others outside of the hostage situation and is dependent on the captor; and
4. The captor is perceived as showing some degree of kindness or benevolence towards the captive.

When the Stockholm Syndrome is applied to battered women, the captive (battered woman) accurately identifies that the aggressor (the abuser) has the power of life and death and actively identifies with the aggressor via pathological transference

and traumatic psychological infantilism (Symonds, 1982, as cited in Graham et al, 1988). Women in ongoing abusive relationships with male intimates experience varying levels of physical abuse interspersed with transient periods of kindness and benevolence from their abusers. Battered women are sometimes literally held hostage by their abusers at knife or gunpoint. Many home hostage situations that result in police intervention and media coverage involve domestic violence. When battered women say, as they often do, that they feel as if they are prisoners in their own homes, they may be struggling with the dynamics of brainwashing, mind control, and the transference effects of the Stockholm Syndrome.

Traumatic Bonding: Intermittent Good–Bad Behavior

Women in abusive relationships frequently minimize the seriousness of the abuse and tend to justify and defend the severe abusive behaviors of the abusers. This seemingly illogical connectedness with the aggressor, especially after severe trauma, has been explained by a model of traumatic bonding. A model of traumatic bonding (Dutton & Painter, 1981, 1993) was developed to explain powerful emotional attachments in abusive relationships created by intermittent abuse and power imbalances. Traumatic bonding can quickly solidify as the subjugated person develops a continual lowering of self-esteem and less ability to live independently. At the same time, the abusive person develops an inflated sense of power. The stronger person becomes increasingly dependent on the weaker to maintain the feeling of power, a feeling the abuser does not want to relinquish.

The unpredictability of this intermittent abuse, coupled with periods of reconciliation, feigned (or partially sincere) contrition, and isolation from the reality checks of family and friends, are catalysts that accelerate traumatic bonding and battered women's fantasies of loving partners (Dutton & Painter, 1993). Traumatic bonding can occur very early in a relationship (Dutton & Painter, 1981, 1993); in fact, it appears to occur for some women during the dating relationship (Raymond & Bruschi, 1989). Intermittent abuse in which women separated the "good-man image" from the "bad-man image" has been identified (Raymond & Bruschi, 1989) in a sample of 90 college students, 43% of whom reported a history that experts interpreted to be psychologically abusive.

Active Recapture Measures

From their extensive clinical practices, Boulette and Andersen (1985) recognized that many battered women struggle with shedding the traumatic bonds that make them feel like prisoners in their own homes. This can be a difficult, and at times immobilizing, process that requires overcoming multiple barriers to leaving including active recapture techniques described by Boulette and Andersen in their clinical paper on mind control and the battering of women. These recapture behaviors include: cocky disbelief, confused searching, bargaining, pleading, threatening, and revenge.

Initially, an abusive male is shocked that his wife or girlfriend would dare to leave him. He is convinced that she could not exist without him and that she will soon come back to him (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). Sometimes, he has so thoroughly

convinced her that she could not make it without him, that she does return to him, begging his forgiveness.

If she does not re-enter the relationship, he begins a period of anxious and/or panicked searching (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). When he discovers where she is staying, he sends bargaining messages that include promises of changed behavior that highlight future love, fidelity, and kindnesses (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). Most women, from this researcher's clinical experience, do not want the relationship to end. They want to return to an ideal relationship full of love, fidelity, and kindness. Promises of change can be a very effective recapture technique (Boulette & Andersen, 1985; Walker, 1979), enticing women back into relationships on multiple occasions.

Over time and after multiple broken promises of change by the abusive male, the battered woman stops being swayed by the abuser's bargaining tactics. The abusive male then often activates the recapture technique of pleading, during which time he pleads and begs for another chance, frequently shedding tears and exhibiting physiologic signs of remorse (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). The tears and sobbing may be interpreted by the woman as love. She feels sorrow and pity towards the man and guilt for precipitating his tears. Men who are successful with the recapture technique of pleading often have brief periods of improved behavior (Boulette & Andersen, 1985) which Walker (1979) described as the honeymoon phase. However, when pleading fails to recapture the abused woman, the abusive male can quickly escalate into the recapture techniques of threats and revenge (Boulette & Andersen,

1985). Threats of physical, sexual and economic harm to her, the children, and her family escalate. He may threaten to kidnap the children or have her institutionalized. Interspersed in the threats are instances of physical abuse and destruction of property and/or pets (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). If she persists in her efforts to stay out of the abusive relationship, the batterer plans revenge tactics that could easily culminate in the woman being severely injured or killed. Johnson (1995) described severe threats and serious abuse as patriarchal terroristic control intended to control women and to keep them from leaving the abusive relationship. These recapture and patriarchal terroristic methods help perpetuate the woman's sense of being a prisoner in her home and help facilitate the processes of mind control, brainwashing, and traumatic bonding (Boulette & Andersen, 1985; Dutton & Painter, 1993; Graham et al., 1988; Johnson, 1995).

Control by Devaluing and Leveling

Threats of violence and actual abuse (physical, sexual, verbal, and economic) have been conceptualized as an outgrowth of psychological control (Thompson, 1989). The recapture tactics (Boulette & Andersen, 1985), patriarchal terroristic control behaviors (Johnson, 1995), brainwashing techniques (Biderman, 1964), and traumatic bonding processes (Dutton & Painter, 1993) can be viewed as interdependent parts of psychological control through the multi-faceted processes of devaluing and leveling (Thompson, 1989). Devaluing is a process by which the abuser systematically communicates to the abused that she has no value in anything she does.

Leveling is a process by which the abuser systematically tears the women down, physically and nonphysically, literally and figuratively. This gradual, intermittent, and insidious course of controlling behavior continues unchecked and unchallenged until such time when the woman, "through a process of becoming aware" (Thompson, 1989, p. 143), recognizes and names her partner's behaviors as abusive.

Recognizing and Naming the Violence

Naming the abuse and developing self-awareness occurs through intra-psychic and external processes which have been described in several ways. Nursing researchers have been at the forefront of studying battered women and the process of leaving. Landenburger (1989) describes the woman's process of leaving as occurring over time through entrapment and recovery through four phases: binding, enduring, disengaging, and recovering. May (1990) labeled the abused woman's intra-psychic process as readiness to terminate. Ulrich (1991) stated that women view leaving abusive relationships as a process that includes concerns about safety, dependency, and personal growth. Fishwick (1993) identified a process whereby women reclaim personal integrity by identifying their changing perceptions of themselves, their abusive male partners, and the relationship. Merritt-Gray and Wuest (1995) also described a process of women reclaiming themselves as prerequisite to breaking free. Studies suggest that recognizing abuse is a retrospective cognitive process that involves becoming aware of abusive behavior by looking back at patterns over time

(Fishwick, 1993; Landenburger, 1989, 1993; May, 1990; Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995; Ulrich, 1991, 1993).

Regaining Personal Integrity

While interviewing 18 abused women about their utilization of health care services, Fishwick (1993) discovered that a major factor influencing women's help-seeking behavior revolves around a process of maintaining personal integrity. Early in the relationship the woman's goal is to protect her personal integrity by developing and sustaining a successful relationship. When the abuse begins, her personal integrity is threatened and she makes numerous attempts to stop the abuse and keep the relationship intact. As the abuse continues, there is a further erosion of her personal integrity, and she intensifies her efforts to improve the relationship. However, at this point she begins to acknowledge that the abuse and the relationship process is unjust. In the final phase, the woman acknowledges that she needs to reclaim her personal integrity in order to have a better life for herself and her children. It is in this phase that she demonstrates more help-seeking behaviors and is more receptive to interventions that facilitate a process of leaving.

Entrapment and Recovery in Abusive Relationships

Landenburger (1989, 1993) interviewed 30 women who were in abusive relationships or in the process of leaving, and identified a process of entrapment in and recovery from abusive relationships. First in Landenburger's four-phase process is a concept called binding. This phase describes the beginnings of the relationship and

the onset of abuse. The woman stays very focused on the positive aspects of the relationship and suppresses the negative aspects (abuse) by: (a) focusing on her strong desire for a loving relationship, (b) overlooking the warning signals of increasing abuse, (c) working on trying to make the relationship better, and (d) questioning her own behaviors as a possible cause of the abusive treatment. The binding phase transitions over time into the enduring phase. During the binding phase the woman's suppression of the abuse is unconscious. However, in the enduring phase, the woman consciously blocks out her abuser's negative behaviors, takes responsibility for his abuse, and knowingly places energy into placating her abuser. She tries to actively hide the abuse from the children, family, neighbors, and the police. While she hopes the relationship can be saved, she struggles with a shrinking sense of self.

In Landenburger's third phase, disengaging, the woman begins to recognize that she is not alone in her struggles, that other women are experiencing similar behaviors from male intimates. She may have arrived at this recognition from reading books or the newspaper, watching television, or talking and listening to friends. She cautiously begins to find a support network. She still cares for her abuser but reluctantly begins to think that she must leave the relationship to be safe. She labels herself as abused, actively seeks help, re-recognizes and develops an emerging feeling of self worth, and often reaches a breaking point that propels her into the final phase, that of recovering. In recovering, the abused woman struggles with basic survival for herself and her children, grieves the loss of the relationship, searches for meaning

about why she endured the relationship, and questions if she will ever be able to enter another relationship. For some women this reflective awareness period occurs as they tell their stories to supportive people, especially as they leave the relationship.

Termination Readiness

May (1990) conceptualized that when a woman is first abused, she struggles with cognitive dissonance. If the level of dissonance produced by the abuse is low, the woman has a low level of readiness to terminate the relationship. She continues to try to improve the relationship until a moderate or severe abusive episode raises the dissonance level to a point where she enters a process labeled termination readiness.

Early in this phase she identifies as a result of advertisements, books, friends, or movies, that she is in an abusive relationship. She validates this identification from social supports and begins rebuilding and strengthening her self-esteem and self-efficacy. From termination readiness, the woman enters the separation phase. She begins rehearsals of leaving which include cognitive and physical work, such as: stashing money; pre-packing bags; hiding car keys; purposefully breaking some of the abuser's rules; and making short attempts at leaving. Once the woman has left and is able to stay out of the relationship, she enters an autonomy phase where she develops more positive social supports, interacts and relates with more positive role models and espouses less traditional female role models (May, 1990).

Reclaiming Themselves

Merritt-Gray and Wuest (1995) found a similar process of leaving they called breaking free in their qualitative study with 13 rural battered women. While initially the battered women minimized the abuse and relinquished parts of themselves to fortify their emotional defenses, they were never passive, helpless victims. Central to breaking free of the abuse was the woman's process of reclaiming herself. This reclamation was facilitated by social support networks or hindered by lack of social support networks.

Reaching Full Potential as Women

In her interviews with 51 formerly battered women, Ulrich (1991, 1993) co-identified with her respondents that leaving is a process that is dependent on supportive environments, social, economic, and relationship factors, and especially changes in self-concept. As a woman grew personally, she often reached her limit of tolerance and then cognitively allowed an awareness of the abuse that placed responsibility on the abuser. With this awareness came the realization and sense of release that if she stayed in the abusive relationship she would never reach her full potential as a person.

Further Study of the Process of Leaving Needed

Central to the frameworks described are women's efforts to regain personal control and rekindle positive social support networks while in relationships where abusive men exhibit behaviors aimed at maintaining and strengthening their control

through social isolation, coercion, threats, and direct abuse. While becoming self-aware, growing personally, reclaiming personal integrity, and learning to name the violence are constants in the literature on the process of leaving, little research has been done on the practical realities of leaving abusive relationships. For example, the research literature does not address such practical matters as: how a battered woman is to feed, clothe and house herself and her children safely during the leaving process; how she can develop safety plans for herself and her children; how she is to challenge and confront the abuser's purposeful manipulations, misconceptions, and lies; and how is she to identify and cope with the abuser's efforts to maintain or regain his control over her during this critical and dangerous time.

While further study into a battered woman's process of leaving is needed, there are also many unanswered questions concerning the abusive male's behavior. While she is leaving him, are the abuser's behavioral patterns changing? Is the abuse escalating and leading into potentially lethal risk behaviors? Looking for answers to these questions is critical. However, the search for these answers is related to how the etiology of intimate partner abuse is perceived.

Competing Perspectives of Physical and Psychological Abuse

There are several competing perspectives that attempt to explain physical and psychological abuse within intimate heterosexual relationships. First, Johnson (1995) uses a sociological perspective to summarize the family violence perspective introduced by Gelles (1974), Straus (1979) and Straus and Gelles (1986). From a

feminist perspective, Dobash and Dobash (1979, 1992), Pence and Paymar (1986, 1993), and Campbell (1981, 1992) and others (Walker, 1979, 1984; NiCarthy, 1982, 1986) viewed intimate partner abuse as a part of a patriarchal culture that has sanctioned and, at times, actively supported and encouraged misogyny. Dutton (1988) ardently supports a psychopathology perspective in which most abusers are viewed as having diagnosable mental illnesses (Dutton & Painter, 1981, 1993; Dutton & Starzomski, 1993).

The Family Violence Perspective

Johnson (1995) states that supporters of the feminist perspective have been at odds with supporters of what he calls the family violence perspective, a sociological scholarly view of violence in families based on research data from large national surveys (Gelles, 1974; Steinmetz, 1977-1978; Straus, 1979). From the family violence perspective, many couples, in response to the ordinary conflicts of everyday life, partake in intermittent minor violence (every few months) in which the man or the woman is equally likely to initiate a violent act. Johnson (1995) called this common couple violence and/or mutual violence and predicted that only a handful of perpetrators of this form of intra-couple violence advanced to more severe and/or frequent patterns of violence.

In contrast, Johnson (1995) described “patriarchal terrorism” as that rooted in the patterns of a Western patriarchal family model involving “the systematic use not only of violence, but economic subordination, threats, isolation, and other control

tactics" (p. 284). Control of another is the primary objective of patriarchal terrorism. To achieve control, the abuser will use patterns of various physically and nonphysically abusive tactics. Patriarchal terrorism, which Johnson estimated accounts for a small percentage of all couple violence, is perpetrated almost exclusively by men against women and includes the multiple severe types of abuse found among shelter occupants, and support groups; seen by emergency rooms, police, medical examiners, and courtrooms. Johnson stated that these severe abuse episodes are what are most often described in the feminist-based literature.

Johnson's (1995) descriptions of patriarchal terrorism accurately reflected this researcher's clinical experiences in that there does appear to be subgroups of abusers who are more violent than others. However, his concept of common couple violence is problematic. What he described as common couple violence and/or mutual violence between men and women within stressed relationships may also be conceptualized as self-defense by women after being physically assaulted or threatened by male intimates (Dobash, Dobash, Wilson, & Daly, 1992).

The Feminist Perspective

Intermittent abuse, followed by cycles of improved behavior within relationships where there are power imbalances, is central to many of the feminist discussions of domestic violence (NiCarthy, 1982, 1986; Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993; Walker, 1979, 1984). The feminist perspectives on wife abuse have also focused heavily on the lived experiences of battered women from a variety of clinical,

legal, and community-based service settings. Abuse of all types has been characterized as extremely controlling in nature and rooted in historical and current traditions of the patriarchal family (Dobash & Dobash, 1979, 1992; Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993; Thompson, 1989). The major tenets of this perspective include: (a) patriarchal societal norms have determined truths excluding women; (b) women's subjective and personal experiences are legitimate sources of knowledge and valuable as critical analysis; and (3) subjectivity is inherent in all aspects of knowledge (Bunting & Campbell, 1990; Campbell & Bunting, 1991).

Most students of the feminist perspective have not relied heavily on positivistic (which they would associate with patriarchal) quantitative research methodologies. However, Ford-Gilboe, Campbell, and Berman (1995) clearly state that "in the post-positivist, interpretive, and critical (including feminist) paradigms, both qualitative and quantitative data or a combination of these may be used without violating paradigm assumptions" (p. 14). Feminist-based research on the issues of intimate partner abuse that incorporate multiple methods is beginning to appear in the literature (Parker & McFarlane, 1991; Shepard & Campbell, 1992; Thompson, 1989). This perspective has been most explanatory to this researcher throughout his program of research and clinical practice.

The Psychopathology Perspective

Not surprisingly, psychologists are the principle supporters of the psychopathologic perspective, often, directly studying abusive males and/or indirectly

studying the behaviors of abusive males by studying their battered female partners. Dutton (1988) developed one of the earliest profiles of wife assaulters via a meta-review of published clinical and experimental literature in which he identified two groups of abusers, those who experienced some type of family abuse as children (which accounts for about one third of abusive males) and those who did not experience family abuse as children. Dutton (1988) hypothesized that abusers who experienced abuse as children would have more post-traumatic stress symptoms, more diagnosable psychiatric illness, higher levels of alcohol and drug use, and be more severe in their abuse. Other psychologists have also developed abuser profiles that explain violent male behavior with female intimates as psychopathologic (Hamberger & Hastings, 1986; Gondolf, 1988). Studies about the abusive behavior of males towards female intimates have consistently demonstrated that male responses are not only fraught with social desirability (Adams, Towns, & Gavey, 1995; Dutton & Hemphill, 1992; Tolman, 1989), but that from one-third to one-half of supposedly nonviolent men often have lied blatantly about their abusive behavior (Holtzworth-Munroe et al., 1992). The unreliability associated with asking males to accurately talk about their abusive behaviors has increasingly led researchers to rely on battered women to provide accurate information about abuse by male intimates (Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Gondolf, 1988; Tolman, 1989). This research has empirically supported the efficacy of asking battered women to describe and quantify abusive male behaviors. In contrast, however, women's responses to domestic violence have

not been associated with social desirability (Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Tolman, 1989).

Research from within the psychopathological perspective has helped identify subgroups of abusive males who have psychopathology and who would appear to benefit from traditional mental health diagnosis and treatment. However, viewing most abusive males as mentally ill is contrary to the lived experiences of most battered women who have shared their stories with this researcher. While no doubt some abusers have treatable psychopathology, the psychopathological perspective does not explain the millions of men who fall short of diagnostic criteria yet still use emotional, physical, sexual, and economic abuse to control their female intimate partners. For these men, this author believes abusive behavior is a choice, not an illness.

Summary

Johnson's (1995) description from the family violence perspective of abusive males who partake in patriarchal terrorism describes the intimate relationships of many of the more severely abused women this researcher has seen in clinical practice. In fact, some of these same males may also fit the psychopathologic profiles of severe abusers who have more diagnosable mental illness, have experienced abuse as children, have more post-traumatic stress disorder symptoms, and are more likely to use and/or abuse alcohol and drugs (Dutton, 1988; Hamberger & Hastings, 1986, Gondolf, 1988). However, neither of these perspectives explains the behaviors of the vast majority of abusive men, behaviors that, while not always severe and/or life-

threatening, are still described by abused women as physically injurious, extremely emotionally traumatic, and ultimately quite controlling. The only paradigm that acknowledges the lived experiences of the survivors of violence from male intimates and addresses the abusive males' control issues is the feminist perspective.

Measures of Abuse

Multiple attempts have been made to quantify and measure patterns of abusive behavior: Conflict Tactics Scale (Straus, 1979); the Index of Spouse Abuse (Hudson & McIntosh, 1981); the Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (Tolman, 1989); the Partner Abuse Scale: Physical and the Partner Abuse Scale: Nonphysical (Attala, Hudson, & McSweeney, 1994; Attala, Oetker, & McSweeney, 1995); the Severity of Violence Against Women Scale (Marshall, 1992); the Abusive Behavior Inventory (Shepard & Campbell, 1992); the Measure of Wife Abuse (Rodenburg & Fantuzzo, 1993); and the Danger Assessment (Campbell, 1995). Each tool conceptualizes abuse differently. However, in general, tools designed to measure abuse address five types of abuse: physical, psychological, verbal, sexual, and economic. Within these measures, various subscales (see Table 2) of abuse were identified by the researchers.

In the next sections, a brief review of each of the tools mentioned above will be provided with emphasis on the Conflict Tactics Scale (CTS), the Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA), and the Danger Assessment (DA). The CTS is the most widely used

Table 2

Seven Measures of Intimate Partner Abuse: Identified Subscales

| Measure | Subscales |
|--|--|
| Conflict Tactics Scale (CTS) | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Reasoning • Verbal Aggression • Violence |
| Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA) | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Physical • Nonphysical |
| Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (PMWI) | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Dominance-isolation • Emotional-verbal |
| Abusive Behavior Inventory (ABI) | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Physical • Psychological |
| Severity of Violence Against Women Scale (SVAWS) | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Symbolic (threatened) violence • Actual violence • Sexual violence |
| Measure of Wife Abuse (MWA) | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Physical • Sexual • Psychological • Verbal |
| Partner Abuse Scale Physical (PASPH) | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Physical |
| Partner Abuse Scale Nonphysical (PASNP) | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Nonphysical |

measure of intimate partner abuse, while the ISA and DA have been often used in nursing studies.

Conflict Tactics Scale

The Conflict Tactics Scale (CTS) (see Appendix B) was originally developed by theorists and students for mail survey data collection, then revised for telephone survey data collection. It was designed to measure the relative frequency and severity

of the concept of conflict via the subscales of reasoning, verbal aggression and violence (Straus, 1979). By changing gender direction, the CTS was designed to be given to men or women.

Several versions of the CTS exist. In its most common form, it is a 19-item, relative frequency scale. The internal consistency of the original CTS was supported by computing item correlations with the total score. These item-total correlations for each subscale for husband and wife, respectively were: (a) violence, $r = .87$ and $r = .88$; (b) verbal aggression, $r = .73$ and $r = .70$; and reasoning, $r = .74$ and $r = .70$.

Cronbach's alpha coefficients for the most commonly used version of the CTS solidly support the reliability of the violence and verbal aggression subscales, but are less supportive of the reasoning subscale. In conflict from husband to wife the coefficients for violence, verbal aggression, and reasoning are .83, .80, and .50, respectively. Similarly, in conflict from wife to husband the coefficients are .82, .79, and .51. Measures to establish the validity of the CTS were absent during its developmental phase.

Because of the paucity of tools to measure intimate partner abuse when the CTS was developed 15 years ago, it has been widely used in domestic violence research. The CTS has been primarily used as a self-report tool, a method for which it was not designed nor for which original reliability coefficients were obtained. Nevertheless, the CTS is now receiving increased scrutiny and criticism in the literature. Even though the CTS is thought to assess psychological abuse, it was not

designed to do so since a measure of verbal aggression is not the same as a measure of psychological abuse which is a major focus of this study. In addition, items were generated by theorists without empirical corroboration (Rodenburg & Fantuzzo, 1993). Multiple problems with the stated reliability and validity of the CTS have been identified in the literature, and many of the questions on the CTS may be no better at assessing violence in interpersonal relationships than what one could assess purely by chance (Dobash, Dobash, Wilson, & Daly, 1992).

Index of Spouse Abuse

Hudson and McIntosh (1981) believed that spouse abuse had more than a physical dimension and that the CTS was inadequate in describing domestic violence. They developed the Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA) (see Appendix C) to more accurately measure the relative frequency of occurrence of the concepts of physical (ISA-Physical) (11 items) and nonphysical (ISA-Nonphysical) (19 items) abuse in clinical settings. The ISA offers five responses ranging from never to very frequently. Definitions of physical and nonphysical abuse were not provided, nor did the authors state how the ISA items were derived.

The ISA, a 30-item, self-report, summated-category, partition scale, was designed primarily for routine or periodic use in clinical settings to monitor and evaluate treatment progress of women involved in abusive relationships with male partners. The ISA had solid internal consistency reliability coefficient alphas with known battered women of .90 physical (ISA-Physical) and .91 nonphysical (ISA-

Nonphysical), while a second sample of battered women produced coefficients of .94 ISA-Physical and .97 ISA-Nonphysical. Discriminant validity (concurrent criterion validity) was supported with a sample of 107 known battered and known non-battered women by comparing group means on the ISA-Physical and ISA-Nonphysical with group mean scores on four other clinical scales developed by Hudson (Hudson, 1976, 1977, 1980, 1981; Hudson & Murphy, 1980; Hudson & Proctor, 1977).

While issues of content and face validity were not addressed by Hudson and McIntosh (1981), this author, as a domestic violence clinical expert, believes that the items on the ISA have content and face validity. Hudson and McIntosh's (1981) attempts at weighting the items on the ISA have contributed to its underutilization and were, in retrospect, a futile effort (personal communication, Hudson, April, 1995).

While there appears to be some arbitrariness as to why a few items were placed on the physical versus the nonphysical subscales, in general, the subscales appear to be clinically sound. The authors provide a detailed description of how, through using cumulative frequency scores, they established clinical cutting scores of 10 for the ISA-Physical and 25 for the ISA-Nonphysical to reduce the likelihood of false positives or false negatives.

The ISA has been used in several recent nursing studies (McFarlane, Parker, Soeken, & Bullock, 1992; Campbell, 1994; Campbell, Campbell, King, Parker, & Ryan, 1994), was found to be effective in measuring frequency and severity of physical and nonphysical abuse, and may even have a third subscale (Campbell,

Campbell, King, Parker, & Ryan, 1994) when used to measure poor African-American women's experiences. The third subscale (see Table 3) appeared to contain those items indexing behaviors that are more controlling and isolating in nature.

The ISA has been used often in research conducted by members of the Nursing Research Consortium on Violence and Abuse (NRCVA) of which this author is a member. The ISA is relatively brief and easy for women to complete. While the nonphysical items of the ISA are not labeled as psychological abuse, they nevertheless appear to tap that domain.

Danger Assessment

Campbell (1995) developed the Danger Assessment (DA) (see Appendix D), a measure that attempts to predict the known link between intimate partner abuse and homicide. From her extensive clinical research experience and from published lists of

Table 3

Controlling/Isolating Subscale Items From the Index of Spouse Abuse With Poor African-American Women (Campbell et al., 1994)

| Six Items From the Original ISA | |
|---|-------|
| 6. My partner is jealous and suspicious of my friends | _____ |
| 16. My partner demands that I stay at home to take care of the children . . | _____ |
| 18. My partner feels that I should not work or go to school. | _____ |
| 19. My partner is not a kind person | _____ |
| 20. My partner does not want me to socialize with my female friends | _____ |
| 21. My partner demands sex whether I want it or not. | _____ |

possible lethal danger signals in abusive intimate partner relationships (Sonkin, Martin, & Walker, 1985; Hart, 1988), Campbell's DA instrument lists behavioral warning signals that have been clinically associated with domestic homicide. The DA scale will be described in detail here because it has been used with a measure of psychological abuse (ISA) during the process whereby women leave abusive relationships.

The 15-item DA, which utilizes yes/no responses to mostly abuser-related behaviors, was based primarily on risk factors identified in a series of retrospective research studies of murdered battered women (Berk et al., 1983; Browne, 1986, 1987; Campbell, 1981, 1992; Fagan, Stewart, & Hansen, 1983) and on emergency room findings that being choked by a domestic partner is a potentially lethal type of abuse (Stuart & Campbell, 1989). The DA is not a scale for initial domestic violence assessment. Designed for use with women already identified as abused, the DA, in either clinical and/or research settings, is a scale that attempts statistical prediction versus clinical prediction. All of the items on the DA have been established as correlates of homicide, and as such, the DA is "best thought of as a statistical risk factor assessment, rather than a (clinical) prediction instrument per se" (Campbell, 1995, p. 103).

Prediction of violent behavior, in general, and especially prediction of life-threatening, potentially lethal violence, has been fraught with inaccuracy (Limandri & Sheridan, 1995). Campbell (1995) recommended that the DA be used with caution and

as part of discussions with women involved in abusive relationships as an informal predictor of potential homicide.

The DA, either self-administered by a battered woman or jointly administered by an abused woman and her service provider (health care worker, shelter worker, counselor), is best used in conjunction with a calendar of the past year. Women are asked to mark on a calendar the approximate days and duration of abuse episodes during the previous year. This process appears to be both consciousness-raising and memory triggering (Campbell, 1995). The scale was designed for women still involved in abusive relationships or who are actively in the process of leaving and at possible risk for continued and/or increased abuse.

The DA has been reported in five published studies. Campbell (1995) reported that the mean scores in these studies have ranged from 3.5 to 9.2. Reliability of the items on the DA have been explored two ways. The internal consistency has been estimated in five different studies with coefficient alphas ranging from .60 to .86. Test-retest reliability scores were reported in two studies as .94 and .89 respectively; however, the length of time between administrations of the DA was not stated (Campbell, 1995). While not directly discussed by Campbell, the DA appears to have face and content validity and is presently being used nationally in many clinical domestic violence settings. Convergent construct validity has been explored by its concurrent administration with the CTS and with the ISA in two studies (Campbell, Miller, Cardwell, & Belknap, 1994; McFarlane et al., 1992). In these two studies,

correlations of the DA with the CTS ranged from .55 ($N = 79$) to .49 ($N = 156$), respectively. Correlations of the DA with the ISA (combined) were .75 ($N = 156$). These correlations are only moderately supportive of validity. However, unlike the CTS and the ISA, the DA was not designed as a domestic violence assessment tool. The correlations support shared variance in abuse constructs; however, they do not support redundant or overlapping constructs, which is not surprising since the measures were designed to test different things.

Validity of the DA has been further explored by administration to different groups of abused and nonabused women. Analysis of this process does lend stronger support to the validity of the DA. The group that scored highest on the DA (9.2) was comprised of abused women using emergency room services for serious intentional injuries ($N = 17$), while the second highest scoring group (8.7) were women in emergency battered women shelters ($N = 30$). Pregnant women ($N = 156$) in routine pre-natal settings scored the lowest (3.5) of all abused women. Studies that sampled women living in the community had DA scores in the intermediary range (5.5 to 6.3). All of the group scores were congruent with the theoretical explanations of where one would find the most severely abused women and women at risk for abuse.

The DA has been an effective clinical measure of frequency, severity, and lethality risk markers. While Campbell (1995) did not address completion time, the DA takes approximately 10 minutes if the woman completes the recommended calendar and severity sections. If the woman completes only the 15 yes/no items, the

DA can be completed in about 2 minutes. However, women who complete this measure often express a strong desire to talk further about the danger in their lives.

Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory

Tolman (1989) found that the CTS and ISA did not adequately measure psychological abuse of battered women in either clinical or research settings. Therefore, he developed the Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (PMWI) (see Appendix E) to be administered to battered women and their male abusers. The 58-item PMWI, with a five-level rating scale of relative pervasiveness of occurrence ranging from never to very frequently, was designed to intentionally exclude items that measured physical abuse (Tolman, 1989). Factor analysis reduced PMWI items to two subscales: dominance-isolation behaviors and emotional-verbal abuse (Tolman, 1989). Tolman reported that males provided apparently socially desirable responses, as evidenced by the low intra-couple agreements, making the PMWI unreliable for use with abusive males.

Partner Abuse Scales: Physical and Nonphysical

Expanding on the ISA, Hudson (1990) developed two, 25-item, relative frequency self-report measures: the Partner Abuse Scale: Physical (PASPH) (see Appendix F) and the Partner Abuse Scale: Nonphysical (PASNP) (see Appendix G). There are seven possible responses on the PASPH and PASNP ranging from never to all of the time. Partial validation of the PASPH and PASNP were reported by Attala et al., (1994) from a battered women's shelter population that was contrasted with a

nonabused control group. Initial cutting scores were established for both tools. While not addressed by Attala et al. (1994), the PASNP and PASPH have face and content validity. However, instead of addressing what others have increasingly acknowledged as the overlap of all forms of abuse, Hudson (1990) created two distinct and independent measures that contained obviously redundant items. This may help explain the scarcity of studies that have used the PASPH and PASNP.

Severity of Violence Against Women Scales

The Severity of Violence Against Women Scales (SVAWS) (see Appendix H), a 46-item, four-response (never, once, a few times, many times) relative frequency measure, was developed by Marshall (1992) to more sensitively test attempted, threatened, and completed abusive behaviors by male intimates. Items on the SVAWS were derived from a list of 49 abuser behaviors identified in the domestic violence literature. In contrast to Tolman (1989), Marshall included only items that described threatened, attempted, and/or completed acts that were likely to result in physical injury or pain. These acts were sorted by college students and by statistical impact weights into nine factors: symbolic violence, threats of mild violence, threats of moderate violence, threats of serious violence, mild violence, minor violence, moderate violence, serious violence, and sexual violence. These dimensions were further divided into symbolic (threats), actual, and sexual violence.

Abusive Behavior Inventory

The Abusive Behavior Inventory (ABI) (see Appendix I), a 30-item, five-response relative frequency scale (ranging from never to very frequently), was created initially to evaluate a domestic abuse program in consultation with program staff and battered women survivors (Shepard & Campbell, 1992). Twenty psychological abuse items were created from within subcategories of the feminist-based power and control model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) (see Appendix A). Those subcategories included emotional abuse, isolation, intimidation, threats, use of male privilege, and economic abuse. Ten physical abuse items were included that also tapped the domain of forced sexual behaviors. While the conceptualization and design of the study is commendable, the study sample severely limited generalization of the findings. Males in the sample population were 90% White and females were 97% White. Further, all of the males were enrolled in a chemical dependency treatment program within the Veteran's Administration health delivery system.

Measure of Wife Abuse

The 60-item Measure of Wife Abuse (MWA) (Rodenburg & Fantuzzo, 1993) (see Appendix J) was designed to measure the type, frequency, and severity of abuse within couples. The type of abuse was measured within four subscales—physical abuse, sexual abuse, psychological abuse, and verbal abuse—each with 15 items. Frequency was measured by having respondents record the exact number of instances per item, while severity was measured by having the respondents circle one of four

items on level of hurt/upset ranging from this never hurt or upset me to this often hurt or upset me. Items were generated from a list of abuser behaviors gleaned from reading 269 temporary restraining orders filed by battered women clients in abused women's programs. The items were sorted by the authors, then further sorted by four domestic violence professionals into the four major subscales. A strength of the MWA was its design. It was designed to measure the frequency and the level of hurt during the past 6 months to two groups of women: those in ongoing abusive relationships and those out of abusive relationships who were asked to remember the last 6 months when they were in abusive relationships.

Summary

The concept of psychological abuse in combination with actual and threatened behaviors is central to the conceptual framework of this study. Despite its frequent use in the research literature related to psychological abuse, the CTS is not a tool that measures psychological abuse. The ISA measures physical, nonphysical and possibly isolating and controlling abuser behaviors (Campbell, Campbell, et al., 1994); its nonphysical subscale measures psychological abuse better than the CTS (Tolman, 1989). The ISA is easy to complete and has been used often in nursing research.

While long, the PMWI is an excellent measure of psychological abuse; however, actual physical abuse, destruction of property, and threats of abuse were purposefully excluded from the tool. Abuser behaviors of interest in this study of harassment of battered women, include threats of abuse and destruction of personal

property. The PASNP and PASPH appear to be revised, longer, more redundant versions of the ISA that have been artificially forced into separate tools. The SVAWS appears to be an excellent measure of physical abuse and threats of physical abuse and property destruction; however, it was intentionally designed to exclude psychological abuse. The SVAWS is limited in that it measures predominantly physical abuse.

While the ABI taps the domains of psychological and physical abuse, its use with such a small, predominantly White, substance-abusing sample of veterans severely limits its generalizability. Although it has great potential, the ABI was under-tested. The MWA is another measure with potential for utilization within the conceptual framework of this study; however, it also is a tool that has not been used beyond its initial development. Conceptually, however, it lends credibility to the efficacy of asking women who are out of abusive relationships about recent abuse.

The DA, which is not a measure of psychological abuse, adequately correlates a measure that taps psychological abuse, the ISA-Nonphysical. Specifically, the DA is most accurately viewed as a measure linked conceptually to homicide or pre-homicide. Within the conceptual framework of this study, the relationships between psychological abuse, threatening behaviors, leaving abusive behaviors, and homicidal and pre-homicidal behaviors are also linked. The ISA, DA, ABI, and MWA contain items that are conceptually related to harassment of abused women and could have been utilized in construct validity testing. However, as will be described in Chapter

III, this researcher had no direct influence on the choice of measures that selected for construct validation with a measure of harassment.

Abuser Literature Review

Though scientific literature from the battered women's movement in the United States began to appear in the mid 1970s, most inquiry about male perpetrators of intimate partner abuse took another decade to develop. Research into abuser behavior can be divided among three underlying paradigms; psychopathologic, learned social, and sociological feminist. An overwhelming percentage of male psychologists have approached abuser research from the psychopathologic logical positivist paradigm while a few psychologists and professionals from other disciplines have more often utilized the other paradigms and research modalities, including qualitative research.

Studies from the Psychopathologic Paradigm

Dutton (1988), developed one of the earliest profiles of wife assaulters through a meta-review of published clinical and experimental literature. In general, he reported that interviews with survivors of wife assault suggested that some abusers are tyrannical and have a personality disorder. Other early profiles of wife assaulters in the experimental literature suggest that wife assaulters can be categorized into subcategories ranging from the most dangerous (men violent inside and outside the home) to those who are only occasionally violent (Hanneke, Shields, & McCall, 1981).

Hamberger and Hastings (1986) categorized batterers using the Millon Clinical Multiaxial Inventory (MCMI) (Millon, 1983) into three clinical diagnostic categories: (a) schizoid/borderline; (b) narcissistic/antisocial; and (c) passive-dependent/compulsive (see Table 4). Nonabusive participants in their study were recruited from local family and marriage counseling groups, family practice medical clinics, and church-sponsored marital adjustment groups, while abusive men were primarily recruited from a court-ordered batterer's group.

Based on random cluster analysis of 6,000 women in Texas shelters, Gondolf (1988), rated abusers from most violent to least violent: (a) the Sociopathic Abuser; (b) the Anti-Social Abuser; and (c) the Typical (Sporadic/Chronic) Abuser (see Table 4). Both a strength and weakness of Gondolf's (1988) descriptions of batterer behaviors are that they are based entirely on the voices of abused women in shelter settings. Such a sample, it can be argued, may not be a true representation of abused women in the general population. Women in shelters certainly represent a phase of leaving abusive relationships. In addition, women in shelters may represent women more likely experiencing patriarchal terrorism and may be more at risk to either kill or be killed (Johnson, 1995).

Holtzworth-Munroe et al. (1992) found in five studies that efforts to recruit nonviolent men to control groups were hampered by the fact that up to one-third of the men who scored maritally nondistressed, nonviolent and up to one-half of the men who scored maritally distressed, nonviolent on self-report measures had actually been

Table 4

Abuser Typologies

| Author(s) | Diagnostic categories | Abuser behaviors |
|-----------------------------|------------------------------|--|
| Hamberger & Hastings (1986) | Schizoid/borderline | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Difficulty entering/maintaining close relationships • Chooses solitary activities • Has no close friends besides immediate family • Appears aloof and emotionally cold |
| | Narcissistic/antisocial | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Reacts to criticism with shame and rage • Has unreasonable sense of entitlement • Lacks empathy for others • Is exploitive of others • Childhood history of physical and sexual violence, truancy, harming pets, destroying property • Adult history of frequent fights and financial irresponsibility |
| | Passive-dependent/compulsive | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Sulky, irritable, and argumentative when asked to do something he does not want to do • Avoids obligations • Criticizes and scorns people in authority • Feels devastated and helpless when close relationships end • Preoccupied with petty rules • Insists, unreasonably, that others submit to his way of doing things |

(Table continues)

Table 4 (Continued)

| Author(s) | Diagnostic categories | Abuser behaviors |
|----------------------|-----------------------|---|
| Gondolf (1987, 1988) | Sociopathic abuser | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Extreme physical and sexual abuse • Unpredictable • Prone to violence outside the home • Frequent arrests • Polysubstance abuse |
| | Antisocial abuser | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Extreme physical and some sexual abuse • Some violence outside the home • Polysubstance abuse |
| | Typical abuser | <ul style="list-style-type: none"> • Mild-to-moderate physical abuse • Little interaction with police • Limited drug and alcohol use |

violent towards their female partners sometime during the previous year, according to scores on their wives' reports on the same measures. This compilation of studies supported previous findings that self-reports of violence by men differ from the reports by their female partners.

Dutton and Starzomski (1993), studied 75 female partners from a sample of 120 abusive men who had been diagnosed with borderline personality organization (BPO). Men with BPO form unstable intimate relationships that parallel their unstable sense of self. They often exhibit intense bursts of anger, impulsive drug-seeking, and promiscuous behaviors. Dutton and Starzomski supported their decision to interview the women about their abusive male partners' behaviors by citing prior couple studies that demonstrate abusive males report about half of the abuse that their female partners report (Browning & Dutton, 1986; Szinovacz, 1983) and that male perpetrators often give socially desirable responses (Adams et al., 1995; Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Dutton & Hemphill, 1992; Tolman, 1989).

There is support in the literature, though not universal, that alcohol and drugs contribute to abusive behavior. Three studies found a positive relationship between the use of alcohol and/or drugs and abusive behaviors (Gondolf, 1988; Hamberger & Hastings, 1990; Hastings & Hamberger, 1988). Witnessing abuse as a child correlated with perpetrating abuse as an adult in several studies (Caesar, 1988; Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Hastings & Hamberger, 1988; Kalmuss, 1984; Kalmuss & Seltzer, 1986; Murphy, Meyer, & O'Leary, 1993; Walker, 1984).

Jealousy is a concept discussed in the abuser literature that plays a role in increased abuse and/or risk of abuse (Andersen, Eloy, Guerrero, & Spitzberg, 1995; Barnett, Martinez, & Bluestein, 1995; Ganley, 1981; Holtzworth-Munroe & Anglin, 1991; Hyden, 1995; Ryan, 1995; Sonkin & Durphy, 1982; Sonkin, Martin, Walker, 1985). In fact, jealousy and feelings of rejection were significant findings in men who scored nonabusive but who were having marital or relationship difficulties (Holtzworth-Munroe & Anglin, 1991).

Studies from a Learned Social Behavior Paradigm

Much of the abuser research is devoted to seeking familial precursors or predictors of future abuse. For example, witnessing abuse as child appears to be highly correlated to future abuse (Caesar, 1988; Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Hastings & Hamberger, 1988; Kalmuss, 1984; Kalmuss & Seltzer, 1986; Murphy et al., 1993; Walker, 1984). Specifically, male children being reared in violent homes are at greater risk for becoming batterers of their intimate partners. This is consistent with a review of the violence prediction literature that identifies a history of past violence, in general, as the best predictor of future violence (Limandri & Sheridan, 1995).

Bennett, Tolman, Rogalski, and Srinivasaraghavan (1994) studied 63 male inpatient drug and alcohol addicts and 34 of their female partners in a Chicago-area treatment program. They examined the relationship between histories of violence, addiction and drug abuse in their families of origin and the relationship with current intimate partner abuse and drug and alcohol abuse. They collected data through a

variety of instruments and conducted semi-structured interviews about the men's onset of alcohol and drug use.

Bennett et al. (1994) found no relationship between alcohol use and most drug use and increased abusive behavior. However, they did find that cocaine use was related to increased domestic abuse. Again, unlike findings from studies conducted from the psychopathologic paradigm (Caesar, 1988; Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Hastings & Hamberger, 1988; Kalmuss, 1984; Kalmuss & Seltzer, 1986; Murphy et al., 1993; Walker, 1984). Bennett et al. (1994) found little relationship in their sample between witnessing abuse as a child and becoming an abuser as an adult.

As is consistent with findings from studies within the psychopathologic paradigm (Adams et al., 1995; Dutton & Hemphill, 1992), Bennett et al. (1994) found that abusers gave socially desirable responses and that the best predictor of future intimate partner abuse was a history of past intimate partner abuse and arrest for violent and/or substance abuse related crimes. Unlike advocates of the psychopathologic paradigm (Dutton, 1988) who hypothesize that intra-psyche traumas from witnessing and experiencing family violence as a child are related to acts of intimate partner violence as an adult, Bennett et al. (1995) focused their discussion on abusers' choices of repeating abusive behaviors learned in the process of becoming an adult. While they disagree with the etiology of intimate partner abuse, they asserted that, taken as a whole, their findings support psychology-based studies that have found a link between anti-social behavior and severe domestic violence.

Study from a Sociologic-Feminist Paradigm

Hyden (1995) conducted a 2-year qualitative study which included 143 semi-structured, tape-recorded and transcribed interviews of 20 couples in abusive relationships. The convenience sample was comprised of couples in which the husband's violent behavior towards his wife was reported to the Stockholm police either by the woman, her children, or neighbors. Hyden described her analysis process as most resembling a feminist symbolic interactionist's approach. She focused her coding on process issues, use of language, and on the informants' social understandings of the violent episodes. Gender differences in the focus of the remembered violent episodes were found. Women focused mainly on the actual violent events and the aftermath that left them feeling very afraid and "mentally broken" (p. 61), whereas men focused mainly on the verbal prehistory.

Men were very focused on addressing, often in negative terms, who and what provoked the violent episode. In fact, 18 men described verbal fights as the precursor of physical violence. In two cases the physical violence by the man was a planned, strategically timed surprise assault on the woman to avenge for prior conflicts and was not preceded by a verbal fight. By the end of the 2-year study, 8 of the 20 women had left the abusive relationships.

Of particular relevance to this researcher are Hyden's (1995) descriptions of the two cases of violent abuse that were not preceded by verbal arguments. Both of these women were in the process of leaving (divorcing) their husbands. Specifically,

the abusive men's behaviors were conscious and planned; occurred in more public settings; included acts that were physically, psychologically, and sexually harmful; and their stated intent was to shame and humiliate the women for revenge.

Summary

There is considerable support for the notion that severe abusers exhibit varying degrees of psychiatric illness that can be behaviorally identified by the seriousness and severity of their violent and controlling behaviors (Bennett et al., 1994; Dutton, 1988; Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Gondolf, 1988; Hamberger & Hastings, 1986, 1990; Hanneke et al., 1981; Hastings & Hamberger, 1988; Johnson, 1995; Murphy et al., 1993). Those abusers who commit more serious abuse have been labeled by both researchers and clinical psychologists as schizoid, borderline, narcissistic, antisocial, sociopathic, psychologically rigid, and as domestic terrorists (Gondolf, 1988; Hamberger & Hastings, 1986; Hastings & Hamberger, 1988; Johnson, 1995).

Gondolf's (1988) work with data from shelter settings revealed that 48% of the women whose abusers were identified as sociopathic and antisocial were experiencing severe violence consistent with the lethality risk markers identified by Campbell (1995). These behaviors include: use of weapons, severe beatings, forced sex, purposeful property destruction, and violence outside of the home. However, these same severely abused women also took the most help-seeking steps (Gondolf, 1988) consistent with the process of leaving. This finding is in contrast to Dutton and Painter's (1993) work with traumatic bonding in which he reported that severely

abused women have difficulty seeking help because of over-identification with and dependence on the power of the abuser, behaviors similar to those associated with the Stockholm Syndrome. One explanation for the different findings might be that Gondolf's sample was comprised entirely of women from domestic violence shelters, while only about 75% ($n = 38$) of Dutton's sample were battered women from domestic violence shelter services. The remaining women in Dutton's sample ($n = 12$) were the partners of men in batterer treatment programs who were still living with their abusers.

Many of the emotional and behavioral patterns of male behavior described in the abuser literature are similar to those associated with harassing behaviors. These include feelings of jealousy and rejection (Holtzworth-Munroe & Anglin, 1991) and public embarrassment, planned threats, and revenge (Hyden, 1995). In addition, assessing men about their abusive behaviors appears unreliable while assessing women about their recollections of their abusers' behaviors appears to provide more accurate information (Bennett et al., 1994; Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Gondolf, 1988; Holtzworth-Munroe et al., 1992).

Homicide Issues

Campbell (1981) pioneered research exploring the relationship between misogyny (hatred of women) and homicide as a major health problem in need of extensive study. A review of 192 homicides of women in Dayton, Ohio, between 1968 and 1979, revealed that 91% ($n = 175$) were killed by a male, 28 by a known male

intimate. In contrast, of the 681 men killed during the same time period, only 19% ($n = 127$) were killed by women, 29 by a known female intimate. Campbell stated that the overall predominance of men killing women compared to women killing men cannot be explained by male biological tendencies. Instead, she raised the possibility that at the root of male homicide of women is misogyny.

Misogyny is best understood as a derivative of a patriarchal social system. Campbell (1981) defined patriarchy as a social organization in which males hold dominant power and determine the role (or lack thereof) of women within the organization. Patriarchal traditions within numerous cultures spread through religion, written history, economics and conquests. Within this world view, women were relegated to being the primary child rearers, a role still embraced by many today.

The roots of modern history, religion, and psychiatric care have been at best critical and demeaning towards women; at worst, they have resulted in the masculine ethic of machismo, which rigidly defines women as property, sex-objects, and subjects of male dominance. It is within this patriarchal concept of machismo that misogyny flourishes (Campbell, 1981). "Oppression of women or other classes or races enhances the power of men [However,] when males feel that they are becoming powerless, violence or the threat of violence often results" (Campbell, 1981, pp 71-72). In heterosexual relationships, the males' feelings of powerlessness are a major factor when women are in the process of leaving (Campbell, 1981).

Prior studies into the homicide of women, according to Campbell (1981), have had the effect of minimizing male responsibility by emphasizing that wives kill husbands as often as husbands kill wives or that somehow women precipitated their own homicides (Curtis, 1974; Langley & Levy, 1977). In Campbell's data (1981), only two women (7.1%) initiated the negative physical contact prior to being killed. However, for 23 men killed by women (79%), the man struck the woman first, often repeatedly, before she killed him. In addition, none of the women who killed men had beaten the men prior to committing the homicide, whereas 64% ($n = 18$) of the men who killed women had beaten them before committing the crime.

In the police reports, jealousy was one of the most frequently cited precipitating factors for intimate partner homicide (Campbell, 1981). This included male jealousy even in those cases where the man ended up dead. Within the patriarchal context, women are viewed by men as possessions to be controlled. Jealousy of imagined or real sexual infidelity is a serious threat to male control. The abusers' sense of ownership of the women did not end with termination of the relationships. Campbell (1981) found that 28% ($n = 8$) of the 28 women killed by known intimates or formerly intimate partners had either left, divorced, or were in the process of divorcing their male partner.

Epidemiologic Attempts to Quantify Domestic Homicide

Mercy and Saltzman (1989) explored patterns and trends in 16,595 marital homicides reported by police departments to the Federal Bureau of Investigation over

a 10-year period from 1976 through 1985. Included in the analysis were murders (by police reports) between legally married, remarried, separated (but still married) or legally common-law spouses age 15 and older. These homicides represented 8.8% of all homicides reported during that period. Excluded from the analysis were 646 known marital-related homicides: specifically, 340 murders committed by a divorced spouse; 193 cases of marital homicide that included multiple offenders; and 113 homicides that were listed by police as “justifiable” meaning most often that the homicide was committed in self-defense. Also excluded from the analysis were homicides between unmarried intimate or formally intimate partners. No explanation was given by the authors for excluding the above homicides.

Overall, wives were found to be 1.3 times more likely to be killed than husbands, and police records listed that an intense argument between the couple was overwhelmingly the precipitating event (Mercy & Saltzman, 1989). Their analysis of reported marital homicide provided sobering numbers: on average, at least 1,600 people died each year during the study period. These numbers were conservative at best. Mercy and Saltzman acknowledged in their discussion that there were many gaps and flaws in the FBI homicide data collection process, especially in local, regional and state interpretations of common-law spouse designations.

Kellerman and Mercy (1992) explored rates of fatal violence and victimization between men and women in 215,273 homicides between 1976 and 1987 cited in FBI Uniform Crime Report data. While significantly more men were murdered than

women, 77% and 23%, respectively, the murder of women by strangers was extremely rare. Women were most often killed by someone they knew (40%), especially a spouse, former spouse, lover, or former lover (Kellerman & Mercy, 1992). In fact, more than twice as many women were shot and killed by a husband or intimate partner than were killed by strangers using all means of homicide combined. However, when women committed a homicide, they were five times more likely to murder a spouse, intimate partner or family member than a stranger.

As was consistent with the Mercy and Saltzman (1989) study, Kellerman and Mercy (1992) found that a firearm (most often a handgun) was the weapon most used (74%) to kill both men and women. The data suggested that women killed their husbands with firearms at about the same rate as did men. This finding strongly supported the presence of a firearm (handgun) in the home as a homicide risk marker (Campbell, 1986).

Kellerman and Mercy (1992) argued that while the rates of spousal homicide with firearms were similar, the reasons for the shootings were different. They stated, “Men commonly kill their female partners in response to the woman’s attempt to leave the abusive relationship. Women on the other hand, often kill their male partners in self-defense or in retribution for prior acts of violence” (pp. 3-4).

Cross-Cultural Epidemiologic Studies of Domestic Homicide

Wilson and Daley (1993) analyzed multi-year spousal homicide rates with cohabitating couples and estranged couples in Canada, New South Wales, Australia,

and Chicago and found that the women's estrangement from their spouses substantially increased their homicide risks. Canadian national homicide data from police reports between 1974 and 1990 accounted for 1,748 spousal homicides (1,333 wives and 415 husbands). The authors reported that because of Canadian police reporting practices, the Canadian data grossly under-reported the number of homicides between current or ex-boyfriends and girlfriends. The data from the New South Wales (NSW) study consisted of police data on 398 spousal homicides between 1968 and 1986 (303 wives and 95 husbands). The NSW data was reportedly only slightly better at capturing current and ex-intimate relationship data (Wilson & Daly, 1993). The Chicago data were collected by Wilson and Daly and others and represented 1,758 spousal homicides (875 wives and 883 husbands) between 1965 and 1990. As with the NSW data, the Chicago data set captured some current and ex-intimate partner homicides but was probably still an under-accounting of true prevalence (Wilson & Daly, 1993). In all three studies, the authors found that estrangement disproportionately explained the risk of homicide of women, and as a consequence stated "women who attempt to terminate relationships with men are frequent homicide victims" (Wilson & Daly, 1993, p. 3).

Not only does the analysis by Wilson and Daly (1993) highlight the increased homicide risk associated with estrangement, separation duration data from the NSW study documented that 47% ($n = 15$) of the women were murdered within 2 months of leaving the relationship and 91% ($n = 29$) were murdered within 1 year of separating.

Of the 2 husbands slain, 1 died within 2 months of estrangement. Separation duration was not recorded in the Canadian data. It was recorded in only 20 of the Chicago female homicides and of those, 10 were murdered within 2 months of leaving the relationship, while 17 of the 20 homicides (85%) died within 1 year of estrangement. Four (44%) of the husbands killed by wives died within 2 months of separation while 7 (78%) died within a year of estrangement. In a subset of 37 wives who had publically expressed the desire to terminate the relationship, Chicago police reports clearly demonstrated that the husband was trying, unsuccessfully, to rekindle the relationship just prior to killing his wife (Wilson & Daly, 1993). In the Chicago data only one man was killed by a woman after he initiated separation procedures. These data support the assertion that the first year out of an abusive relationship is the most deadly for battered women. Wilson and Daley concluded that not only was physically leaving an intimate relationship a risk factor for homicide but that beginning the process of leaving was “an important risk factor in uxoricide” (p. 6). Wilson and Daley also stated that countless more women are subjected to near-lethal violence and increased violence, controlling jealousy, coercion, threats, and control tactics while in the process of leaving relationships. They speculated that the motive for the increased violence during separation is related to men’s need to maintain ownership of their “valued sexual and reproductive commodities,” (p. 6) women. This perspective is very consistent with this researcher’s clinical experiences.

“If I Can’t Have You, No One Can”

Wilson and Daly (1993) prefaced their paper with a quotation from a man who killed his wife after being separated for a month saying that if he could not have her, no one could. That same threat has been echoed in hundreds of the domestic violence histories given to this researcher in clinical practice. Campbell (1992) entitled her discussion of power and control in homicides of female partners “If I Can’t Have You, No One Can...” Using her 1980 homicide study data from Dayton, Ohio, Campbell re-analyzed her initially reported findings (Campbell, 1986) and discussed motive in more detail. Over 64% of the 28 women killed by an intimate or formally intimate partner had a history of being physically abused. Additionally, in 64% of the murders the police reports indicated that male jealousy was a primary motive even though none of the police reports or newspaper clippings indicated if the women were involved in intimate relationships with someone other than the murderer. This finding supports argument that male jealousy connotes male control and ownership (Campbell, 1992).

Of particular interest is Campbell’s (1992) review of female homicides against women who had either left the relationship or had stated they were going to leave. Thirteen (46%) of Campbell’s sample of murdered women had actually left the relationship ($n = 11$) or had threatened to leave the relationship ($n = 2$). All 4 of the male victims of homicide in Campbell’s study used violence against their estranged wives just prior to the wives use of homicide. The police records reported that the

murdered men had expressed jealousy toward the women having a new male intimate and were trying to get back together at the time of their deaths. Campbell cited one case in which a man “constantly harassed his ex-wife and returned many times to the house to violently accost her for months after the divorce” (p. 106). On one such occasion, the ex-husband was let into the home by one of his children. The woman locked herself in her bedroom, then shot and killed her ex-husband when he kicked down the bedroom door and came at her. Despite what appeared to be a case of self-defense, the woman was convicted of voluntary manslaughter and sentenced to 20 years in prison (Campbell, 1992).

Jones (1980) reviewed court cases where women killed their abusive husbands and were incarcerated and found that most of the women had tried to leave the abusive relationships many times. Their abusers used a multitude of tactics to bring the women back and prevent them from leaving again (Jones, 1980). Besides enduring marked increases in direct physical abuse and threats of abuse, most abusers purposefully socially isolated their women, some to the point where the women were literally prisoners in their own homes. Numerous examples were given of women being severely beaten, shot at, stabbed, followed and stalked throughout the day; followed and stalked from town to town and/or followed and stalked from state to state (Jones, 1980). Many of the women who killed their abusers reported being tracked down, being repetitively sexually assaulted and having their children hurt and/or threatened, sometimes at gunpoint. One woman was forced by her abuser to dig her own grave,

only to have the grave used for the family cat and the decapitated head of her favorite horse, both of whom were killed by the abusive husband.

Numerous women who killed their abusers were, at some point previously, forced to return to the abusive relationships literally at gunpoint. Threats by abusive males to hurt or kill the women's family members and friends if they did not return to the relationship were the norm for these women. Harassing telephone calls and the monitoring of their telephone calls were frequently cited difficulties. These harassing and threatening behaviors, for some women, continued many years after they had left the relationships, with some "cases on record of men still harassing and beating their wives twenty-five years after the wives left them and tried to go into hiding" (Jones, 1980, p. 299). Jones captured the essence of this researcher's years of clinical experience when she stated "If researchers were not so intent upon assigning the pathological behavior to the women, they might see that the more telling question is not, 'Why do the women stay?' but 'Why don't the men let them go? . . . Homicide is a last resort, and it most often occurs when men simply will not quit" (p. 298-299).

Ewing (1987) recognized that battered women were subjected to severe psychological abuse in addition to physical abuse. In fact, he stated that: "the psychological consequences of the battering relationship are frequently more significant because they prevent the battered woman from seeking help or terminating the relationship" (Ewing, 1987, p. 5). In Ewing's review of the domestic violence literature, he found numerous examples of battered women who had been physically

imprisoned, beaten physically, and psychologically abused and threatened. Battered women had often threatened or tried to commit suicide, while the abusers often threatened suicide in order to keep the women from leaving or to get them to return to the relationship (Ewing, 1987).

In his review of 100 cases of women who killed abusive husbands, Ewing (1987) found in court records that nearly all of the women had been subjected to severe psychological abuse that included “the killing of family pets, beatings in front of the children, the keeping of a miscarried fetus in the family freezer, forced prostitution, forcible drug injection, physical and sexual abuse of their children” (p. 32). In addition most of the women, and often their children, had been subjected to increased physical violence and death threats. Eighteen of the women also reported sexual assault, including oral and rectal sodomy and insertion of objects including firearms into vaginas, rectums, and mouths. Much of the sexual assault was sadistic in nature and occurred after the women reported that they had been threatened with severe injury, mutilation, public embarrassment, and death if they left. Despite these threats, many of the women did leave but were often persuaded to return to the relationship by the abusers’ promises of improved behavior. When the behaviors did not improve, the women left again, only to be found in hiding, subjected to hundreds of harassing telephone calls, having personal property destroyed, enduring countless threats with knives and guns, having protective court orders ignored by the abusers, and having the abusers show up at their homes or workplaces (Ewing, 1987).

Ewing (1987) and others (Browne, 1987; Walker, 1989) found that there were four psychological aspects that seemed to separate battered women who kill from battered women who do not kill. Battered women who killed were subjected to more death threats (Browne, 1987); threatened with weapons more often (Walker, 1989); forced to see their children hurt and abused, often sexually (Browne, 1987; Walker, 1989); and raped and sexually assaulted by the abuser more often (Browne, 1987; Walker, 1989). In fact, Browne (1987) found that 79% of battered women who killed had been forced into sex at least once by the abuser.

Ewing (1987) compared the plight of many battered women to that of hostages: the psychological effects on the abused women are similar as are the tactics between the abuser and the terrorist. Among the 100 cases, Ewing found numerous examples that corresponded with the traumatic bonding theory (Dutton & Painter, 1981) and the Stockholm Syndrome (Graham et al., 1988; Graham et al., 1995). For those women experiencing domestic terrorism, Ewing believed it was helpful to explain why they saw homicide as a way to end the abuse. He stated: "Once battering is recognized it becomes easier to identify with the psychological plight of the battered woman and to understand why the use of deadly force to escape that plight is, in many cases, a form of self-defense" (Ewing, 1987, p. 75).

In interviews with 42 women from 15 states who either killed or tried to kill their abusive partners, Browne (1987) found that all of the women reported severe psychological and verbal abuse, extreme verbal harassment, surveillance, sleep

deprivation, restriction of activities and threats of severe physical abuse and death. The women reported a pattern of violence that included a combination of violent physical abuse, verbal abuse, and threats, especially if they tried or threatened to leave. The pattern included death threats to the women and to others. Expressions of regret for the abusive behavior, often coupled with threats from the male partners that they would kill themselves if the women left, often resulted in the women returning to the abusive relationship. Often in this process, the male abusers would blame the abuse on substance use.

Browne (1987) found that many of the women in her study had actively tried to leave the abusive relationship, but were harassed, followed, physically hurt, and threatened. This is consistent with clinical reports that as many as 50% of abused women who leave are harassed, followed, and further hurt (Moore, 1979). Several of the abusers reportedly had their families lie in court to gain custody of the children. They then used access to their children as a tactic to get the women back into the relationships. For a few women, the abusers' threats to kill the children precipitated their choosing lethal violence against the abuser. Many women reported sexual assault, forced captivity, and severe abuse of pets (Browne, 1987).

In a study of 50 battered women who killed their abusers, Walker (1989) found that women tried multiple times to leave despite many barriers to this process. The price paid for their attempts to leave included more severe beatings, being stalked across state lines, and life-threatening harassment and abuse (Walker, 1989). She

found that battered women in her study believed that the abusers could and would do anything to keep them from leaving and that the:

. . . increased terror experienced by the battered woman during separation, divorce, and child custody proceedings is based undeniably in reality.

Separation creates a period of unprecedented danger in battering situations, a danger not often recognized by others. The batterer would often rather kill, or die himself, than separate from the battered woman” (Walker, 1989, p. 65).

Self-defense by Battered Women

Even though the number of males killed by females was almost identical to the numbers of females killed within the domestic related homicides, Campbell (1981) was clear in her explanation that the numbers did not reflect that women are as violent as men. On the contrary, she found from the police records that men who were intoxicated, previously violent and/or motivated by control of women issues (jealousy) were the ones most likely to kill or be killed in domestic disputes. In a majority of the cases where women killed men, at least some elements of self-defense were evident (Campbell, 1981).

Ewing (1987) stated that women often feel like they must physically defend themselves due to limited enforcement of domestic violence protective court orders and lack of police protection, even in cases where the abuser had used lethal threats against the woman. In addition, Ewing asserted that self-defensive behavior by women

is supported by the lack of shelter beds and ineffective identification, treatment, and referral of the victims and perpetrators of abuse by health professionals.

Kuhl (1986) explored the role of self-defense as a justifiable homicide plea for battered women in a review of Uniform Crime Statistics from the mid-1980s. The research found that husbands were victims of their wives in 4.1% of all homicides, while wives were victims of their husbands in 4.9% of all homicides. Nevertheless, Kuhl agreed with others (Campbell, 1981; Russell, 1982) that while these numbers are fairly equal, women are much more likely to kill in perceived self-defense.

The primary purpose of Kuhl's (1986) research was to examine the concept of self-defense as the basis for justifiable homicide among battered women. To that end, Kuhl cited the definition of self-defense from Black's Law Dictionary (1981). It was defined as the right to protect one's self and property from harm by another and included that the defendant did not cause or provoke the situation; that there was no apparent easy or reasonable mode of escape; that the defendant believed he was in immediate danger; and that the defendant used only the necessary amount of force to avoid danger (Kuhl, 1986).

Kuhl's (1986) case examples support this researcher's clinical observations that women can be harassed to the point that they see killing their abuser as the only way to prevent themselves from being killed. Based on Kuhl's case histories, women leaving abusive relationships appear to be at higher risk of homicide, either as the perpetrators or the victims.

Summary

The process of leaving abusive relationships is related to domestic homicide. In fact, the risk of domestic homicide among women appears highest during the process of leaving, especially during the first year out of the abusive relationship.

Jealousy and feelings of ownership toward the women were reported as major homicide precursors, as was the presence of firearms in the home. Women who killed their abusers most often killed: (a) in self-defense-related responses to ongoing abuse; (b) after being subjected to severe and often sadistic sexual assault; (c) after receiving threats of physical and sexual harm and/or threats of homicide to the their children; and (d) after enduring repetitive forms of harassment that included threats to family and friends, numerous, unwanted telephone calls, destruction of property, including pets, and stalking-like behaviors.

Developing a Conceptual Framework and Measure of Harassment

The need for a measure of harassment of battered women was identified in 1991 by this researcher in collaboration with fellow members of the Nursing Research Consortium on Violence and Abuse (NRCVA). Conceptually, such a measure would help link the relationship between escalating abuse, the process of leaving abusive relationships, and homicide risk potential. While the DA (Campbell, 1986) explored homicide risk potential, NRCVA members identified that the existing measures of physical and psychological abuse measured abuse only within the

conceptual framework of ongoing violent relationships, not in relationships where women were trying to leave or had recently left.

Gaps of Existing Measures in Measuring Patterns of Interrelated Types of Abuse

Existing domestic violence measures psychometrically force behaviors into subcategories as if items in each subcategory are independent of each other. In addition, existing measures of abuse do not look at patterns of escalating violence, especially potentially lethal patterns that can occur while women are in the process of leaving. Most existing measures of domestic violence view abuse occurring in the context of ongoing relationships despite longstanding discussions in the literature about the increased danger to women when they try to leave abusive relationships. None of the existing measures have tried to identify abuser behaviors that make leaving, or staying out of, abusive relationships difficult.

In general, most clinicians and researchers conceptualize domestic abuse as containing multiple types of closely related, almost inseparable behaviors that tap the domains of physical, psychological and sexual abuse (Campbell, 1995; Fortune & Horman, 1981; NiCarthy, 1982, 1986; Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993; Rodenburg & Fantuzzo, 1993; Russell, 1982; Shepard & Campbell, 1992; Sonkin, 1995; Thompson, 1989; Tolman, 1989; Walker, 1979; Yoshihama & Sorenson, 1994). While there was some discussion of verbal and economic abuse as separate categories, most experts conceptualized them as part of psychological abuse.

Despite the conceptualization of multiple, closely related forms of abuse, authors of measures of abuse put a great deal of effort into identifying distinct subcategories (Hudson, 1990; Hudson & McIntosh, 1981; Rodenburg & Fantuzzo, 1993; Shepard & Campbell, 1992; Straus, 1979; Tolman, 1989). This artificial taxonomic process was counter-intuitive to the clinically identified patterns of multiple forms of related, often escalating patterns of abuse that annually culminates in thousands of domestic homicides.

Many of the clinical authors identified abusive relationships marked by patterns of abusive behavior that escalated as women made efforts to leave or change the abusive relationship (Boulette & Andersen, 1985; Campbell, 1984; Campbell, & Fishwick, 1993; Dobash & Dobash, 1979; Dutton, & Painter, 1981, 1993; Graham et al., 1988; Johnson, 1995; NiCarthy, 1982, 1986; Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993). Despite these extensive clinical discussions of escalating patterns of abusive behavior against women while in the process of leaving abusive relationships, all but the MWA and the DA measure violence in ongoing relationships.

This escalating pattern of violence may help propel several hundred thousand women to seek help from service providers such as battered women's shelters, law enforcement agencies, and hospital emergency departments in their efforts to leave abusive relationships (Johnson, 1995). It is from this population of women experiencing domestic terrorism (Johnson, 1995) that this author believes one would find women most at risk for potentially lethal violence. None of the aforementioned

measures of abuse addresses escalating patterns of abuse, and only the DA attempts to explore potential lethality issues within the relationship.

Lack of Lethality Assessment in Measures

For many women, the process of leaving an abusive relationship can be a uniquely dangerous, potentially lethal span of time as documented by the body of literature that examined homicide of and by women in the process of leaving abusive relationships (Browne, 1987; Ewing, 1987; Gillespie, 1989; Jones, 1980; Walker, 1989). Despite this recognized lethality risk potential when leaving abusive relationships, to date there is only one measure, the DA, that tries to appraise the dangers involved. Campbell (1995) has been developing and testing the DA for over a decade. Nevertheless, the DA does not address that window of time prior to the development of potentially lethal risk behaviors (personal communication, Campbell, September, 1997) nor does it capture the link between the abusers' escalating patterns of abuse, increasing potential for lethality (Campbell, 1986), and efforts to recapture their women (Boulette & Andersen, 1985).

Harassment While Leaving Abusive Relationships

Based on this author's experiences as a clinician, the behavioral patterns of an abuser change and appear to intensify as a battered woman initiates the process of leaving. Initially, to keep the woman in the relationship, the abuser will usually apologize and temporarily improve his behaviors (Boulette & Andersen, 1985; Walker, 1979). When his apologies and transient efforts at improved behavior fail to

keep the woman in the relationship, his behavioral patterns worsen (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). The frequency and severity of threats of physical harm, psychological and sexual abuse may intensify as the abuser tries to terrorize the woman into returning to the relationship. This set of new and intensified, manipulative, coercive, and threatening behaviors becomes what this author refers to as a process of harassment.

At the same time that she is experiencing harassment, the battered woman may also be subjected to active recapture strategies (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). In relationships where the abuser is reluctant to relinquish his control, he is more likely to subject the woman to the behaviors described as patriarchal terrorism (Johnson, 1995). Based on this author's clinical experience and interviews with battered women, this is the point at which the abuser begins a series of indirect and direct threats of harm that can escalate into revenge towards the woman, her family, friends, and belongings. Escalation of these episodes has been described as a precursor to homicide (Browne, 1987; Campbell, 1992, 1995; Ewing, 1987; Jones, 1980; Wilson & Daley, 1993).

None of the existing measures of abuse address this period of time. A measure indexing this harassment period would likely enable clinicians and the battered woman to more realistically assess the possibility for safely leaving the abusive relationship. Such a measure, coupled, for example, with Campbell's (1995) Danger Assessment

measure, may improve the overall understanding of the period of leaving and its lethality trajectory, and may also help to predict which women are in the most danger.

Prior Work By This Researcher

As part of doctoral course work, in 1992 this investigator developed a 45-item pilot measure of harassment called HARASS (Harassment in Abusive Relationships: A Self-report Scale) (see Appendix K). The tool was based in part on open-ended interviews with formerly abused women around the concept of harassment. From the transcribed and coded interviews and from this author's extensive clinical forensic experiences, patterns became apparent among the repetitive harassing behaviors by abusive males. Repetitive patterns of behavior identified from these interviews included: attempts to control the women's daily activities; verbal threats of physical harm, especially if the women were trying to leave the relationships; threats of murder and/or suicide; stalking-like actions (surveillance and/or following the women); and financially controlling behaviors. As with the literature on the process of leaving abusive relationships, the female respondents described leaving as a dynamic process typified by multiple attempts to leave and acknowledged that harassing behavior became repetitive and more frequent as they attempted to leave.

Interviews with nurse domestic violence experts were also conducted. The nurses identified the following behaviors as harassment: stalking, pet killing, threats of sexual abuse, frequent unwanted telephone calls, destruction of property, and threats of harm to the battered woman, her family, or friends. In addition, the battered women

respondents and the nurse experts both asserted that the effect of these harassing behaviors was to make the women feel bothered, trapped, emotionally worn down, threatened, frightened and/or terrified of temporarily leaving and/or terminating the relationship.

Based on these interviews with battered women and expert service providers, a preliminary operational definition of harassment was established as follows:

Harassment is defined as a persistent pattern of behavior by a male intimate partner that is intended to bother, annoy, trap, emotionally wear down, threaten, frighten, and/or terrify the woman in order to control her behavior.

Qualitative Evaluation of HARASS

It is recommended that nurses conducting instrumentation studies use qualitative interviews to help clarify concepts about to be measured (Brink & Wood, 1989). Therefore, 10 additional qualitative interviews with women in the process of leaving abusive relationships were conducted during this author's doctoral program of study to further refine the concept of harassment and to explore the need for changes in items on the 45-item pilot HARASS. Within this convenience sample, efforts were made to purposefully avoid a homogenous sample (Patton, 1990) by seeking interviews with women of different cultures and ethnicities as well as with those who were in crisis shelters and those from the community.

The audio-recorded and transcribed interviews were analyzed using a Denzinian interpretive interactionist approach (Denzin, 1989) from the perspective

that at the root of most domestic violence are issues of power and control (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993). Consistent with the Denzinian approach, which involves thick descriptions of social events and troubles, the researcher is expected to have first-hand experience with the issues. One of the major tenets of Denzin's approach is that the researcher be immersed in the topic of interest. Interpretive interactionism: is postpositivist, building on feminist critiques of positivism; explores social constructions of power, gender, knowledge, history, and emotion; and is interactional and biographical (Denzin, 1989). The additional interviews, through a process of deconstruction, capturing, bracketing, construction, and contextualization (Denzin, 1989), were coded into major themes that included the words of the respondents and the words of this researcher. The interpretation that resulted was invaluable in assisting this researcher to describe patterns of harassment in the experiences of women leaving abusive relationships.

Harassment Within a Power and Control Framework

Harassment is a mechanism of power and control (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) that is present in ongoing abusive relationships but which becomes more pervasive as women try to leave abusive relationships. The Pence and Paymar categories of power and control seemed to conceptually represent much of the behavioral content of HARASS. Each behavior on the 45-item pilot HARASS measure were sorted by this researcher, and a former director of a battered women's

shelter, into one of eight concepts identified within the Power and Control Model (see Table 5).

To control the woman, the abuser will often use the children (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) as a means of harassment. For example, he may threaten to harm and/or snatch the children if she tries to leave him and/or use the children as pawns to get her physically close to him. She may be harassed in court during civil and criminal justice proceedings as the abuser uses male privilege (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993). The male abuser may purposefully delay divorce proceedings, ignore court orders to stay away from her, and/or use his contacts and friends within the criminal justice or family law systems to his advantage. Economic abuse (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) occurs as the abuser harasses the woman by taking her property, her money, not paying bills he agreed to pay, bothering her at work, thus jeopardizing her source of income, and/or playing games with child support checks.

The abuser will use coercion and threats of harm (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) to the woman, her family, and her friends to induce her to return to the relationship. Examples of coercive and threatening harassing behaviors include: threats with a weapon; false accusations to authorities that she abuses her children; threats that he will kill her and/or himself if she does not return to him; threats sent to her via his friends and family; showing up without warning; and threats of continued forced sex.

Table 5

Sort of 45-Item HARASS by Eight Categories Within the Power and Control Model
(Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993)

| Category | Item # | Description |
|--------------------------|--------|---|
| Use of the children | 6 | Threatens to harm the kids if I leave him |
| | 8 | Threatens to have the kids taken away from me |
| | 17 | Threatens to snatch the kids if I leave him |
| | 22 | Uses the kids as pawns to get me physically close to him |
| Use of male privilege | 19 | Ignores court orders to stay away from me |
| | 40 | Uses his connections to make my life difficult |
| | 45 | Refuses to grant me a divorce |
| Economic abuse | 7 | Bothers me at work when I don't want to talk to him |
| | 9 | Tries to get me fired from my job |
| | 15 | Tries getting money from me |
| | 20 | Takes my property (for example: checks, food stamps, car, etc.) |
| | 37 | Agrees to pay certain bills, then doesn't pay them |
| | 38 | Plays games with the child support check |
| | 44 | Sold things I own without my consent |
| Use coercion and threats | 3 | Falsely accuses me of child abuse |
| | 12 | Threatens to kill himself if I leave him |
| | 18 | Comes to my home when I don't want him there |
| | 21 | Frightens my family |

(Table continues)

Table 5 (Continued)

| Category | Item # | Description |
|---|---------------------------------|--|
| Use coercion and threats (continued) | 23 | Uses his friends or family to send me threatening messages |
| | 25 | Threatens to kill me if I leave or stay away from him |
| | 28 | Shows up without warning |
| | 29 | Makes me feel like he can again force me into sex |
| | 41 | Reports me to the authorities for taking drugs when I don't |
| | 43 | Leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine |
| Using intimidation | 2 | Scares me with a weapon |
| | 4 | Threatens to harm our pet |
| | 5 | Intentionally harms our pet |
| | 10 | Messes with my car (for example: cuts the tires, etc.) |
| | 11 | Destroys my property (for example: breaks my furniture, etc.) |
| | 13 | Calls me on the phone and hangs up |
| | 14 | Follows me |
| | 24 | Leaves notes on my car |
| | 30 | Sends me threatening letters |
| | 31 | Breaks into my home |
| 32 | Sits in his car outside my home | |
| 35 | Keeps showing up wherever I am | |

(Table continues)

Table 5 (Continued)

| Category | Item # | Description |
|----------------------------------|----------------------|--|
| Using emotional abuse | 1 | Uses my family or friends to pressure me to stay in the relationship |
| | 26 | Buys me or sends me things that I don't want |
| | 33 | Pretends to be someone else in order to get to me |
| | 36 | Takes things that belong to me so I have to see him |
| | 42 | Tells other people that I am crazy |
| Using isolation | 16 | Tries to stop me from seeing other people |
| | 27 | Gets himself in crises to keep me near him |
| | 34 | Frightens my friends |
| | 39 | Interferes with my efforts to go to school |
| Minimizing, denying, and blaming | No items from HARASS | |

Use of intimidation (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) through gestures, destruction of property, stalking, and hurting pets has been described by battered women as harassment. Emotional abuse, especially through guilt-producing humiliation, mind games, and name calling (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) can be harassing in nature. The man emotionally abuses the woman by calling her crazy and playing games with her by using his family or friends to pressure her to stay in the relationship, pretending to be someone else in order to locate her, and/or buying her unwanted gifts. In addition, numerous activities that further isolate (Pence & Paymar,

1986, 1993) the battered woman from her support system have been viewed as harassment. These include preventing her from seeing other people, getting himself into crises so she has to rearrange her activities to help him, and interfering with her efforts to complete school or job training. Intertwined, in all of the above harassing behavior items are the abuser's lies, manipulations, efforts to minimize the abuse, and victim-blaming behaviors, behaviors named by Pence and Paymar (1986, 1993) but not included in the 45-item pilot HARASS measure.

Chapter Summary

Harassment of women in the process of leaving abusive relationships occurs within the context of psychological abuse which can include: brainwashing, mind control, active recapture tactics, male jealousy, power and control, traumatic bonding, and the Stockholm Syndrome. Women experiencing domestic terrorism from abusers who are sociopathic and/or who have severe anti-social personality characteristics appear to be at increased risk of harm and possible domestic homicide as they try to leave these relationships.

While some harassment appears to be part of ongoing abuse, existing measures of physical and psychological abuse do not address the pattern of harassment, especially the increased harassment of women as they leave their abusers. The link between harassment and homicide in the literature is strong. Unchecked, harassment can culminate in the death of the abused woman and/or the abusive man. Therefore, there is a strong need to better understand harassment of battered women, especially

women in the process of leaving abusive relationships. To address that need, a reliable and valid measure of harassment of battered women is needed. This dissertation addresses the following research questions:

Research Question 1: What is the reliability and validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure?

Research Question 2: What are the fewest number of items that support the reliability and validity of the HARASS measure?

Research Question 3: Does the 45-item pilot HARASS measure and/or a refined version of the HARASS measure fit the within the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993)?

CHAPTER III

METHODS AND PSYCHOMETRIC FINDINGS

This chapter describes the design, methods, and findings of this instrument development study which were used to create a measure of harassment in abusive relationships. The author's work on a draft measure of harassment resulted in the creation of a 45-item pilot harassment instrument that was used, along with several other measures, in two studies by other researchers. The data from those two studies were provided to this author for secondary analysis in order to conduct psychometric analysis and refinement of the 45-item pilot HARASS (Harassment in Abusive Relationships: A Self-Report Scale) measure (see Appendix K).

While face and content validity had been previously established in the 45-item pilot HARASS tool, it was further evaluated using the three research questions. First, the 45-item pilot HARASS measure was examined for its reliability and validity. Next, it was examined to determine the fewest number of items that would continue to support its reliability and validity. Finally, the 45-item pilot HARASS measure and a shortened version of the HARASS measure were examined for their fit within the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993).

Cronbach's alphas were used as the primary determinant of reliability on the 45-item pilot HARASS measure and, subsequently, on a shortened measure of harassment. Convergent construct validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS and a

shortened HARASS measure were explored by examining the hypothesized positive correlations between HARASS and the Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA-Physical, ISA-Nonphysical, and ISA-Combined) and the Danger Assessment (DA). The design, instrumentation steps, and psychometric findings of the 45-item pilot HARASS, as well as a discussion of the reliability and validity of a shortened, 23-item measure of harassment, will be described in this chapter.

Design of Present Study

The present study of secondary data used a psychometric descriptive design intended to explore and describe instrument performance. The 45-item pilot HARASS measure was used in two studies, one by Campbell (1997) and one by King and Ryan (1997). The data from these studies were provided to this researcher numerically coded to prevent subject identification. The data were reentered into the SPSS for Windows 95 Release 6.1™ statistical package in a manner that allowed blending of both data sets including six demographic variables. In Campbell's (1997) study of *Women's Responses to Battering* (see Appendix L), data were obtained concerning harassment with the 45-item pilot HARASS tool, dangerousness with the DA, and the level of physical and nonphysical abuse with the ISA. In King and Ryan's (1997) *Study of the Health Care Needs and Experiences of Abused Women* (see Appendix M), data about the level of physical and nonphysical abuse were obtained with the ISA and about harassment with the 45-item pilot HARASS tool. The DA was not collected

by King and Ryan (1997). Both of these studies used a nonexperimental design and were exploratory in nature (Brink & Wood, 1989; Polit & Hungler, 1983).

Data Collection Instruments

The ISA and DA Measures

The measures used in the studies providing data for secondary analysis included the ISA (see Appendix C), the DA (see Appendix D), and the 45-item pilot HARASS (see Appendix K). The ISA and DA measures were described in detail in Chapter II.

Developing the Concept of Harassment

As part of doctoral course work, this investigator began exploring the concept of harassment of women in abusive relationships with their male intimates. Open-ended interviews using naturalistic inquiry strategies with three formerly battered women were conducted around the concept of harassment. A formal definition of harassment was not given; rather each woman was encouraged to describe harassment for themselves. Each of the respondents stated that their abuser had used harassing behaviors while they were still in the relationship but had employed them more frequently as the woman tried to leave.

To supplement the expertise of women who had lived in abusive relationships, interviews were also conducted by this researcher with three family violence nurse clinical experts. The nurse experts were asked to describe their clients' experiences with harassment from abusive male partners. The nurse experts identified as

harassment the following behaviors: stalking; pet killing; threats of sexual abuse; destruction of the woman's property; frequent unwanted telephone calls to home and work; and threats of harm to the woman, her children, her extended family, and her friends.

Draft HARASS Tool Development and Pilot Testing

Based on the qualitative data from the battered women and nurse experts, an initial 54-item summated-rating self-report dual-question scale (see Appendix N) was created to measure: (a) the frequency of harassing behaviors, and (b) the level of perceived distress. The large number of items was intentional to decrease domain sampling error (Mishel, 1989; Nunnally, 1978). Indeed, Nunnally (1978) states that a beginning measure should contain 60 items, while others suggest that the number of items on the original scale should be almost twice as large as the number of items on the final scale (DeVellis, 1991; Mishel, 1989).

To help assess face and content validity of this 54-item draft, it was distributed to six clinical nurse domestic violence experts, two expert social workers (one a current and the other a former director of a battered women's shelter). All of the experts had extensive clinical and/or research experience with abused women in the process of leaving abusive relationships. The experts were instructed verbally and in writing to rate each of the 54 items (either yes or no) for clarity (Imle & Atwood, 1988) and evaluate each item for content validity (fit) using a 4-point Likert-type content validity index (Waltz, Strickland, & Lenz, 1991). This index asked each expert

to rate how well each item fit the overall construct of “Harassment in Abusive Relationships” using scale ratings of no fit (0), slight fit (1), moderate fit (2), and best fit (3). The experts rated 88% of the 54-items overall as having clarity, while they rated the 54-items overall for fit as follows: 78% best fit, 9% moderate fit, 5% slight fit, and 8% no fit.

The 54-item draft was also discussed at length for face validity, and formatting with three doctoral nursing students familiar with instrument development issues but who were not experts in domestic violence. Based on scores of clarity and fit by the content experts, deletion of redundant items, and further interviews with four of the above domestic violence experts, the 54-item draft scale was shortened to become the 45-item pilot HARASS measure (see Appendix K). For example, items with words like “sabotage” and “stalking” were eliminated from the 54-item draft based on input from many of the domestic violence experts who reported that these words, while descriptive to clinicians, may not be part of abused women’s lexicon. Deleting 9 items improved the overall clarity of the now 45-item pilot HARASS measure to 89% and raised the overall number of items rated best fit to 80%. Comments on tool format from the doctoral students helped in modifying the layout of the measure into a more visually appealing format with better grammar, syntax, and verb usage.

Item Construction and Response Categories

Early in a scale’s development it is best to err toward including redundant items that attempt to express similar ideas in various ways (DeVellis, 1991). On the

45-item pilot HARASS tool, seven sets of items were purposefully worded in different ways with the intention of analyzing for best fit in the future. For example, in one set, Item 4 (threatens to harm our pet) is quite similar to Item 5 (has intentionally harmed our pet), while in another set, Item 21 (frightens my family) is very similar to Item 34 (frightens my friends). These two and the remaining sets will be discussed in more detail later in the chapter.

Two response categories were created on the 45-item pilot HARASS tool: (a) a measure of frequency of harassing behaviors (OFTEN scale) and (b) a measure of level of perceived distress (DISTRESS scale). The possible responses on the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN scale ranged from never (0) to very frequently (4). The possible responses on the 45-item pilot HARASS DISTRESS scale ranged from not at all distressing (0) to extremely distressing (4).

There is debate in the psychometric literature as to whether the responses should contain an even or an odd number of choices (DeVellis, 1991; Mishel, 1989; Nunnally, 1978). An odd number of response choices allows the respondent to pick a response that is more neutral than an even response set, which forces the respondent to make a choice more to one extreme or the other (DeVellis, 1991; Mishel, 1989). However, Nunnally (1978) suggests that the even/odd response set debate is probably not an important issue in overall instrument development issues. A five-item response range was chosen by this researcher for the 45-item pilot HARASS measure specifically because it did not force respondents to choose a response direction.

Because abused women already experience much coercion within the context of their intimate relationships, this researcher decided that the HARASS tool did not need to mirror coercion and force the respondents to make response choices toward one extreme or the other.

The decision to measure each harassing abuser behavior for frequency (OFTEN scale) and level of distress (DISTRESS scale) was made based on the data-driven process of concept synthesis (Mishel, 1989). This is a method of concept development that relies on extensive clinical observations. Many women in abusive relationships, especially those in the process of leaving, have shared with this researcher in clinical settings that certain harassing behaviors from their abusers can occur very infrequently but can produce much distress, and vice versa. Concept synthesis (Walker & Avant, 1983) is based on observational data from nursing clinical practice and, as such, grounds the clinical phenomenon of exploring the frequency and distress level of harassment of women by abusive males directly within the realm of nursing science (Mishel, 1989).

Respondent Instructions and Definitions

The cover page of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure contained an introduction that stated that many women are harassed while trying to get out of abusive relationships. There was also a statement that the HARASS tool was a student project that would take about 15 minutes to complete. Finally, this operational definition was provided:

Harassment is defined as a persistent pattern of behavior by a male intimate partner that is intended to bother, annoy, trap, emotionally wear down, threaten, frighten, and/or terrify the woman in order to control her behavior.

The top of each page of items on the 45-item pilot HARASS tool had identical detailed test instructions. Respondents were asked to circle the number that best described how often the harassing behavior occurred and circle another number to indicate how distressing the behavior was to the women. If the behavior never occurred, the respondents were instructed to circle 0 (never) and proceed to the next question. The 45-item pilot HARASS measure did not include a “Not Applicable” (NA) option. This was problematic for 5 women from King and Ryan’s sample and 2 women from Campbell’s sample. They wrote “not applicable” or “NA” next to several items, explaining that they did not have any children or pets, or that since they were not married, the question on refusing to grant a divorce did not apply. The last page of the 45-item pilot HARASS included five spaces for women to write-in additional harassing behaviors and then rate both how often and how distressing those behaviors were to them.

Summary

A 54-item draft HARASS measure was developed and subjected to preliminary study of clarity, formatting, face validity, content validity. Items were removed that lacked clarity or were redundant. The measure was reduced and reformatted as a 45-item pilot HARASS measure with a two-part response indicating frequency (OFTEN

scale) and level of distress (DISTRESS scale). The 45-item pilot HARASS contained seven sets of items purposefully worded in different ways with the intention of analyzing for best fit in the future.

Sample Description

Campbell's (1997) participants were 93 predominantly African-American community-based women living in a Midwestern city. Data were collected at Time 3 of the longitudinal study that had begun several years earlier (see Appendix L). Campbell (1997) included the 45-item pilot HARASS measure in her study to determine its relationship with the ISA and the DA. Her earlier findings had demonstrated that abused women experienced increased abuse from male perpetrators after they left the relationship; that the majority who left were subjected to ongoing harassment (Campbell, Soeken, & Sheridan, in preparation); and that some abused women were involved in domestic homicide either as victims or perpetrators. Data from women at Campbell's Time 3 study were available for secondary analysis. If Campbell's participants did not feel they were in danger at the Time 3 interview, they were given the option to not complete the DA and/or the ISA.

Participants in the study by King and Ryan (1997) were 51 predominantly Caucasian women recruited from emergency domestic violence shelters along the mid-Atlantic coast. The 45-item pilot HARASS measure, along with the ISA tool, were included to explore their relationship with healthcare-seeking behaviors among

emergency shelter-based women who were seeking health services related to being in abusive relationships (see Appendix M).

Campbell, King, and Ryan received instructions from this researcher on the administration of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure at meetings of the Nursing Research Consortium on Violence and Abuse. Their participation in administering the HARASS was oriented toward providing data for psychometric evaluation.

Protection of Human Study Participants

Campbell (1997) obtained institutional human subjects approval from Wayne State University (see Appendix O) for inclusion of the 45-item pilot HARASS scale in her longitudinal study. Each woman was given oral and written instructions and signed a consent form to participate in the study. Similarly, King and Ryan (1997) received institutional human subjects committee approval from the University of Massachusetts, Amherst (see Appendix P), to use the 45-item pilot HARASS measure. For the present study, an exemption from review by the human subjects committee was received from the Oregon Health Sciences University for a secondary data analysis of both data sets for psychometric purposes (see Appendix Q).

Data Management

Merging and Creating Present Study Data Files

Campbell's (1997) data were provided to this researcher partially on computer disk in a SPSS-PC™ statistical software file format and partially as photocopies of data collection forms. The disk file contained the subject identification number,

demographic variables, scores on the DA, and scores on the ISA. In addition, photocopies of the completed 45-item pilot HARASS measure with the subject identification number were provided. The computer disk file was entered into the SPSS for Windows Release 6.1™ statistical package, and values for the 45-item pilot HARASS items on the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales were then entered and verified.

Data from King and Ryan's (1997) study were provided as photocopies of data collection forms. The participant identification numbers were renumbered, and the data were entered into the SPSS for Windows Release 6.1™ file in a manner that differentiated the two samples. Data on the ISA and 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales were entered and verified. Missing data from both samples were identically coded (-9) and designated as missing so as not to be included in any statistical analysis. The demographic and scale data were evaluated as a combined total sample, as two individual study samples, and as samples of abused or not abused respondents. For analysis involving the DA, only the Campbell data set could be used. The King and Ryan data set did not contain the DA due to their not using that scale in the main study.

Demographic information (see Table 6) on age, education level, number of children, and ethnicity from both data sets were comparably collected so the categories were recoded by this researcher for similarity in data value codes. Data on marital status in Campbell's Time 3 data set were collected by using the four values on the demographic section of the 45-item pilot HARASS tool:

Table 6

Demographic Comparison of Women by Source

| Variable | Source 1 ^a N = 93 | Source 2 ^b N = 51 |
|--|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Mean age ^c | 32.49 | 31.45 |
| Ethnicity ^d | | |
| Black/African-American | 77.4% | 12.2% |
| White/Caucasian | 15.1% | 71.4% |
| Hispanic | 2.2% | 10.2% |
| Native American | 2.2% | 4.1% |
| Asian/Pacific Islander | 1.1% | ----- |
| Other | ----- | 2.0% |
| Marital status | | |
| Married, living with ^e abuser | 15.7% ^f | 2.0% ^g |
| Single, living with ^e abuser | 19.10% | ----- |
| Married, living apart ^e from abuser | 10.10% | 29.4% |
| Single, living apart ^e from abuser | 55.10% | 68.6% |
| Mean education level in years ^c | 12.88 | 12.67 |
| Standard deviation | 2.76 | 2.27 |
| Mean number of children ^c | 2.47 | 2.13 |
| Standard deviation | 2.05 | 1.57 |
| Mean number of months in the relationship ^c | 100.00 | 75.86 |
| Standard deviation | 88.75 | 61.28 |

^aCampbell's (1997) community-based sample. ^bKing & Ryan's (1997) shelter-based sample. ^ct tests nonsignificant, using alpha = .05 criterion. ^d $\chi^2 = 45$, $df = 2$, $p < .001$. ^eliving with versus away from abuser: $\chi^2 = 40$, $df = 1$, $p < .001$. ^fmarital status: $\chi^2 = 8$, $df = 1$, $p < .001$. ^gmarital status: $\chi^2 = 47$, $df = 1$, $p < .001$.

1. Married, living with the abusive male;
2. Single, living with the abusive male;
3. Married, living apart from the abusive male; and
4. Single, living apart from the abusive male.

Data on marital and living status in King and Ryan's original data set were collected differently than Campbell's data set. Nevertheless, King and Ryan's data on these variables were recoded case by case to match the format of Campbell's data. The data on length of time in the relationship were collected in both studies in number of years but were recalculated by this researcher to number of months because many women gave specific numbers of years and months and/or were in the relationships for less than 1 year. The number of children variable was collected differently in each study. Campbell asked for number of children in various age groupings, while King and Ryan collected only the total number of children. Campbell's data were recoded and verified case by case to provide the total number of children for each participant. Other demographic variables collected by Campbell (1997) and King and Ryan (1997) could not be used because of lack of comparability across data collection tools.

Conducting t Tests for Equality of Means on Demographic Variables

Four demographic variables—age, education level, number of children, and time in the relationship—were examined for statistical significance using t tests for equality of means. There were no statistically significant differences in the mean ages, education levels, number of children, and time in the relationships between

Campbell's and King and Ryan's participants. However, the findings on the mean number of months in the relationship required closer scrutiny. This variable approached significance ($p = .07$) on comparison of means, and there was a significant lack of homogeneity of variance as measured by Levene's Test for Equality of Variance ($F = 5.93$, $df = 128.13$, $p < .02$). In Campbell's community-based sample, the women were in relationships approximately 24 months longer than King and Ryan's shelter-based sample ($M = 100.00$ months and 75.86 months, respectively). The lack of homogeneity of variance in the number of months in the relationship was not an unexpected finding.

Cross Tabulations on Collapsed Demographic Data

A series of collapsed cross tabulations with Chi-square statistics were conducted on two comparable demographic variables from both studies: (a) ethnicity; and (b) if the women viewed themselves as living with, versus away from, their abusers. Because there were too few Native American, Asian, and Hispanic participants in both samples to conduct meaningful cross tabulations on specific ethnicity, these categories were collapsed into a Non-White/Non-Black category. As expected, there were significant differences in the combined sample in the number of Black/African-American, White/Caucasian, and Non-White/Non-Black women in the two studies ($\chi^2 = 45$, $df = 2$, $p < .001$). When examined separately, there were also significant differences in the number of Black/African-American, White/Caucasian,

and Non-White/Non-Black women within each sample (Campbell's sample, $\chi^2 = 87$, $df = 2$, $p < .001$; King & Ryan's sample $\chi^2 = 32$, $df = 2$, $p < .001$).

The four categories of the demographic variable Marital Status were collapsed to a 2x2 chi-square matrix of living with the abuser and living apart from the abuser. The two samples were significantly different ($\chi^2 = 40$, $df = 1$, $p < .001$). This difference was expected, since in King and Ryan's (1997) sample, 98% ($n = 50$) of the women described themselves as living apart from their abusers, while in Campbell's sample only 65% ($n = 57$) of the women reported living apart from their abusers. Examined as separate samples, there were also significant differences in the collapsed Marital Status category in Campbell's respondents and in King and Ryan's respondents ($\chi^2 = 8$, $df = 1$, $p < .05$ and $\chi^2 = 47$, $df = 1$, $p < .001$, respectively).

Summary

Computer disk data and photocopies of data collection forms from both studies were combined into one file, in a manner that differentiated the two samples, on SPSS for Windows Release 6.1™ for this study. There were no statistical differences in the mean education level, number of children, and time in the relationships between Campbell's (1997) and King and Ryan's (1977) participants. As expected, Campbell's urban-dwelling community participants were predominantly Black/African-American women and less likely to view themselves as living apart from their male abusers. In contrast, King and Ryan's small town, emergency-sheltered participants were

predominately White/Caucasian women who, with only one exception, viewed themselves as living apart from their male abusers.

Data Analysis

Data from both samples were examined individually, then combined for their means, standard deviations, range of responses (see Tables 7 and 8) and differences. As expected, there were significant differences between the women in the emergency shelter and the women in the community. King and Ryan's (1997) combined (abused and nonabused) shelter-based participants scored statistically more physically and nonphysically abused by almost 40 points than Campbell's community-based participants as measured by the ISA combined scores ($M = 108.37$ and 68.39 , respectively) ($t = 8.13$, $df = 124$, $p < .001$). Viewed as separate samples, King and Ryan's participants were harassed almost twice as often as Campbell's participants as measured by the 45-item pilot HARASS ($M = 1.52$ and $.79$, respectively) ($t = -5.25$, $df = 80.91$, $p < .001$) and the 23-item reduced HARASS measure ($M = 1.51$ and $.73$, respectively) ($t = -5.17$, $df = 78.77$, $p < .001$). Further, viewed separately, King and Ryan's participants were more distressed than Campbell's participants on the 45-item pilot HARASS ($M = 1.72$ and $.93$, respectively) ($t = -5.53$, $df = 87.71$, $p < .001$) and the 23-item reduced HARASS tool ($M = 1.74$ and $.89$, respectively) ($t = -5.39$, $df = 86.11$, $p < .001$).

Table 7

Comparison of Campbell's (1997) and King and Ryan's (1997) Combined Samples

| Measure | Sample | | t test |
|--|----------------------|-------------------------|------------|
| | Campbell (N = 93) | King & Ryan (N = 51) | |
| ISA Physical total score ^a | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 23.17 | 37.47 | t = -7.52 |
| <u>SD</u> | 10.73 | 10.08 | df = 124 |
| Low to high | 11-55 | 13-55 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 19.4 | None | |
| ISA Nonphysical total score ^b | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 45.21 | 70.90 | t = -7.85 |
| <u>SD</u> | 19.30 | 15.94 | df = 124 |
| Low to high | 19-92 | 35-95 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 19.4 | None | |
| ISA Combined total score ^c | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 68.39 | 108.37 | t = -8.13 |
| <u>SD</u> | 28.61 | 24.68 | df = 124 |
| Low to high | 30-147 | 48-150 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 19.4 | None | |
| ISA Physical mean item ^d | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 2.16 | 3.53 | t = -7.87 |
| <u>SD</u> | .98 | .92 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 1.00-5.00 | 1.22-5.00 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 19.4 | None | |

(Table continues)

Table 7 (Continued)

| Measure | Sample | | t test |
|---|----------------------|-------------------------|------------------------|
| | Campbell (N = 93) | King & Ryan (N = 51) | |
| ISA Nonphysical mean item ^d | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 2.40 | 3.77 | t = -7.98 |
| <u>SD</u> | 1.00 | .84 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 1.00-4.84 | 1.84-5.00 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 19.4 | None | |
| ISA Combined mean item ^d | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 2.30 | 3.65 | t = -8.27 |
| <u>SD</u> | .94 | .83 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 1.00-4.90 | 1.60-5.00 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 19.4 | None | |
| DA Total Score ^e | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 5.46 | Not collected | |
| <u>SD</u> | 2.71 | Not collected | |
| Low to high | 1.00-12.00 | Not collected | |
| Percent missing | 64.5 | Not collected | |
| HARASS 45 OFTEN mean score ^f | | | |
| <u>M</u> | .79 | 1.52 | t ^g = -5.25 |
| <u>SD</u> | .64 | .87 | df = 80.91 |
| Low to high | 0.00-3.36 | .13-3.47 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |

(Table continues)

Table 7 (Continued)

| Measure | Sample | | t test |
|--|----------------------|-------------------------|------------------------|
| | Campbell (N = 93) | King & Ryan (N = 51) | |
| HARASS 45 DISTRESS mean score ^f | | | |
| <u>M</u> | .93 | 1.72 | t ^g = -5.53 |
| <u>SD</u> | .71 | .87 | df = 87.71 |
| Low to high | 0.00-3.36 | .13-3.47 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 3.2 | None | |
| HARASS 23 OFTEN mean score ^f | | | |
| <u>M</u> | .73 | 1.51 | t ^g = -5.17 |
| <u>SD</u> | .68 | .95 | df = 78.77 |
| Low to high | 0.00-3.30 | .09-3.91 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |
| HARASS 23 DISTRESS mean score ^f | | | |
| <u>M</u> | .89 | 1.74 | t ^g = -5.39 |
| <u>SD</u> | .76 | .96 | df = 86.11 |
| Low to high | 0.00-3.26 | .09-3.78 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 6.5 | None | |

^aPossible score 11-55. ^bPossible score 19-95. ^cPossible score 30-150. ^dPossible response 1-5. ^ePossible response 0-15. ^fPossible response 0-4. ^gt test for unequal variances used.

Table 8

Comparison of Campbell's (1997) and King and Ryan's (1997) Samples: Only Women Currently Abused

| Measure | Sample | | t test |
|--|----------------------|-------------------------|------------|
| | Campbell (N = 93) | King & Ryan (N = 51) | |
| ISA-Physical Total Score ^a | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 27.40 | 37.96 | t = -5.74 |
| <u>SD</u> | 9.12 | 9.55 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 8-55 | 18-55 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |
| ISA-Nonphysical Total Score ^b | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 53.43 | 71.62 | t = -5.86 |
| <u>SD</u> | 16.21 | 15.25 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 20-92 | 38-95 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |
| ISA-Combined Total Score ^c | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 80.83 | 109.58 | t = -6.28 |
| <u>SD</u> | 23.11 | 23.61 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 37-147 | 58-150 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |
| ISA-Physical Mean Item ^d | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 2.55 | 3.57 | t = -6.10 |
| <u>SD</u> | .83 | .87 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 1.22-5.00 | 1.67-5.00 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |

(Table continues)

Table 8 (Continued)

| Measure | Sample | | t test |
|---|----------------------|-------------------------|------------------------|
| | Campbell (N = 93) | King & Ryan (N = 51) | |
| ISA–Nonphysical Mean Item ^d | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 2.83 | 3.80 | t = -6.01 |
| <u>SD</u> | .84 | .81 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 1.11-4.84 | 2.00-5.00 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |
| ISA–Combined Mean Item ^d | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 2.72 | 3.69 | t = -6.45 |
| <u>SD</u> | .75 | .78 | df = 101 |
| Low to high | 1.28-4.90 | 1.93-5.00 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |
| DA Total Score ^e | | | |
| <u>M</u> | 6.26 | Not collected | |
| <u>SD</u> | 2.56 | Not collected | |
| Low to high | 3.00-12.00 | Not collected | |
| Percent missing | 56.6 | Not collected | |
| HARASS 45 OFTEN Mean Score ^f | | | |
| <u>M</u> | .85 | 1.55 | t ^g = -4.70 |
| <u>SD</u> | .65 | .85 | df = 91.24 |
| Low to high | 0.07-3.56 | .22-3.47 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |

(Table continues)

Table 8 (Continued)

| Measure | Sample | | t test |
|--|----------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| | Campbell (N = 93) | King & Ryan (N = 51) | |
| HARASS 45 DISTRESS Mean Score ^f | | | |
| <u>M</u> | .97 | 1.75 | t ^g = -5.08 |
| <u>SD</u> | .70 | .85 | df = 94.75 |
| Low to high | 0.00-3.37 | .42-3.47 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 3.8 | None | |
| HARASS 23 OFTEN Mean Score ^f | | | |
| <u>M</u> | .79 | 1.54 | t ^g = -4.54 |
| <u>SD</u> | .71 | .94 | df = 90.90 |
| Low to high | 0.00-3.30 | .09-3.91 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | None | None | |
| HARASS 23 DISTRESS Mean Score ^f | | | |
| <u>M</u> | .91 | 1.77 | t ^g = -5.303 |
| <u>SD</u> | .77 | .94 | df = 94.13 |
| Low to high | 0.00-3.26 | .17-3.78 | p = < .001 |
| Percent missing | 6.5 | None | |

^aPossible score 11-55. ^bPossible score 19-95. ^cPossible score 30-150. ^dPossible response 1-5. ^ePossible response 0-15. ^fPossible response 0-4. ^gt test for unequal variances used.

Since the ISA scores ranged greatly in each sample, the ISA developer's recommendations about score interpretation were used to determine a cut score which clinically differentiated abused women from nonabused women. The two samples were then divided into abused and nonabused (ISA-Physical Abuse Cut Scores ≥ 10 and ISA-Nonphysical Cut Scores ≥ 25 , respectively). When only the abused participants in King and Ryan's sample were compared to abused participants in Campbell's sample, the findings were similar between the two samples (see Table 8). King and Ryan's sample of abused women scored themselves statistically more abused, physically and nonphysically, and almost twice as harassed with almost twice the level of distress from the harassment when compared with Campbell's sample. Comparisons between King and Ryan's sample of nonabused women and Campbell's sample of nonabused women were not psychometrically meaningful because only 1 woman in King and Ryan's sample scored nonabused as measured by ISA-Physical and ISA-Nonphysical measures.

The DA was only collected on 33 of Campbell's 93 total participants, and the ISA was completed by only 75 of Campbell's total participants. The ranges on all of the measures, including the DA, were broadly distributed and supported that there was no restriction of range issues within the data on the measures (see Table 7). Adequacy of range was also supported, since none of the standard deviations on any of the measures varied in an unusual manner (see Tables 7 and 8) though the variances were not always equal between samples. The standard deviations on all scores on the Likert-type responses of the ISA (mean item Combined, Physical, and Nonphysical)

and the HARASS (OFTEN and DISTRESS) scales fell approximately 1 point in either direction of the mean (see Tables 7 and 8). The standard deviation of the yes and no responses to the 15-item DA was 2.71 with a mean of 5.46 for Campbell's total sample and 2.56 with a mean of 6.26 for Campbell's abused women sample.

Research Question 1

Reliability

Research Question 1 asked: What is the reliability and validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure? The HARASS data from both studies that contributed to the secondary analysis were combined and explored for reliability and validity. The analysis used for determining each will be described. Reliability estimates the degree that scores on a measure can be consistently repeated thus providing an estimate of random error (DeVellis, 1991; Mishel, 1989; Nunnally, 1978; Waltz et al., 1991) and is considered the cornerstone of psychological measurement (DeVellis, 1991). High reliability does not guarantee high validity, however, since "reliability is a *necessary* but not *sufficient* condition of validity" (Nunnally, 1978, p. 192). To answer Research Question 1, reliability analysis, as well as item analysis, was done.

Various methods of measuring reliability have been developed. However, the most widely used estimate of reliability is the Cronbach's alpha, an estimate of internal consistency (DeVellis, 1991; Mishel, 1989; Waltz et al., 1991). Internal consistency "is concerned with the homogeneity of the items comprising the scale" (DeVellis, 1991, p. 25) and "is equal to the average of all possible split-half correlations for composite scales that are N items long" (Mishel, 1989, p. 270) and

scored positively between 0 and 1. In general, the more items on a scale, the higher the value of a coefficient alpha (DeVellis, 1991; Mishel, 1989; Nunnally, 1978; Waltz et al., 1991).

Nunnally (1978) suggests that the criterion level for a coefficient alpha for a new or immature measure be at or above .70 and that mature scales be at or above .80. If a measure is going to be used for diagnostic purposes, one should strive for coefficient alphas in the middle .90s (Nunnally, 1978). Coefficient alphas that are greater than .90 indicate redundancy (Nunnally, 1978) and suggest that the tool may need to be shortened. However, DeVellis (1991) advises that for measures in the developmental stage and especially for measures tested on small samples, one should err toward higher alphas.

The Cronbach's alphas for the 45-item pilot HARASS measure on the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales were .96 and .95, respectively, on all cases within the combined sample. Cronbach's alphas ranging from .90 to .95 were also calculated on the 45-item pilot HARASS for: Campbell's total sample; King and Ryan's total sample; the combined samples abused-only cases; Campbell's sample of abused-only cases; and King and Ryan's sample of abused-only cases. In fact, the participants who scored not abused in all cases and samples also had internal consistency alphas that ranged from .90 to .95 (see Table 9).

These values suggested redundancy of items (Nunnally, 1978) and that a 45-item measure of harassment would benefit from an item reduction process that should

Table 9

Cronbach Alpha Coefficient Reliability Scores Between All Study Measures

| Sample | Measures ^a | | | | | | | |
|-------------------------------------|-----------------------|-----------------|-------------------------|-----------------|-----------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------|--------------------------|
| | DA | ISA Combined | ISA Non- physical | ISA Physical | HARASS 45 OFTEN | HARASS 45 DISTRESS | HARASS 23 OFTEN | HARASS 23 DISTRESS |
| Combined sample All cases | .59 n = 33 | .97 n = 118 | .96 n = 118 | .92 n = 122 | .96 n = 124 | .95 n = 77 | .93 n = 134 | .92 n = 90 |
| Campbell's sample All cases | .59 n = 33 | .96 n = 71 | .94 n = 71 | .90 n = 73 | .95 n = 82 | .94 n = 40 | .91 n = 88 | .91 n = 49 |
| King & Ryan's sample All cases | N/A | .94 n = 47 | .92 n = 47 | .85 n = 49 | .95 n = 42 | .94 n = 37 | .92 n = 46 | .90 n = 41 |
| Combined sample Abused only | .51 n = 23 | .94 n = 96 | .92 n = 96 | .87 n = 100 | .96 n = 71 | .95 n = 64 | .93 n = 98 | .92 n = 72 |
| Campbell's sample Abused only | .51 n = 23 | .91 n = 50 | .89 n = 50 | .82 n = 52 | .94 n = 49 | .95 n = 28 | .91 n = 53 | .92 n = 32 |
| King & Ryan's sample Abused only | N/A | .93 n = 46 | .91 n = 46 | .84 n = 48 | .95 n = 41 | .93 n = 36 | .92 n = 45 | .89 n = 40 |

(Table continues)

Table 9 (Continued)

| Sample | Measures | | | | | | | |
|----------------------|----------|--------------------|-------------------------|--------------------|-----------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------|--------------------------|
| | DA | ISA Combined | ISA Non- physical | ISA Physical | HARASS OFTEN 45 | HARASS DISTRESS 45 | HARASS OFTEN 23 | HARASS DISTRESS 23 |
| Combined sample | .46 | .96 | .93 | .96 | .95 | .94 | .92 | .91 |
| Not abused only | $n = 10$ | $n = 22$ | $n = 22$ | $n = 22$ | $n = 34$ | $n = 13$ | $n = 36$ | $n = 18$ |
| Campbell's sample | .47 | .97 | .93 | .96 | .95 | .93 | .92 | .91 |
| Not abused only | $n = 10$ | $n = 21$ | $n = 21$ | $n = 21$ | $n = 33$ | $n = 12$ | $n = 35$ | $n = 17$ |
| King & Ryan's sample | N/A | ----- ^a | ----- ^a | ----- ^a | ----- ^a | ----- ^a | ----- ^a | ----- ^a |
| Not abused only | | | | | | | | |

^aToo few cases, $n = 1$.

examine intercorrelations among items on the scales (DeVellis, 1991; Mishel, 1989). In general, redundancy among items can be determined by looking for inter-item correlations above .70. Such items should be examined for possible deletion according to Mishel (1989).

Doing corrected item-scale correlations is preferred to uncorrected item-scale correlations since they correlate each item with all other items, excluding itself, as an indicator of an item's contribution to the scale (DeVellis, 1991). Inter-item correlation scores that average between .30 and .70 have been recommended (Mishel, 1989). Correlations of a social or psychological nature of .70 or higher are considered very high (Polit & Hungler, 1983) and probably redundant. Inter-item correlations below .30 suggest a weak relationship since there is a markedly reduced shared variance between the two sets of scores. A correlation of .70 explains 49% of the variance between two sets of scores (Waltz et al., 1991). Nevertheless, a correlation of .30 that explains only 9% of the variance is still viewed as explaining a significant portion of the relationship (Ferguson & Takane, 1989).

The reliabilities of the ISA (all scales) with all cases (abused and not abused) in all samples (combined Campbell's and King & Ryan's) were also high (see Table 9). The ISA-Combined alphas were in the .90s for all cases and samples, while the ISA-Physical alphas ranged from .82 to .92. The ISA-Nonphysical alphas ranged from .89 to .96. The internal consistency scores of the DA were not as high. When the scores of all of Campbell's participants who completed the DA were combined, the

DA alpha was .59 (see Table 9). Campbell's abused participants scored an alpha of .51 on the DA while her nonabused participants scored an alpha of .46 on the DA.

Validity

“Validity refers to the ability of an instrument to measure exactly what it is supposed to measure and nothing else” (Mishel, 1989, p. 272). Three major types of validity discussed in the measurement literature (DeVellis, 1991; Mishel, 1989; Nunnally, 1978; Polit & Hungler, 1983; Waltz et al., 1991) were addressed in this study: (a) content validity, (b) construct validity, and (c) contrasted groups validity (also considered by some authors to be a type of construct validity).

Content validity relates how well the items on the measure reflect the domain being measured (DeVellis, 1991; Waltz et al, 1991). As was discussed earlier in this chapter, content validity was supported in the development of items to index harassing behaviors on the 54-item draft HARASS and again in the reduction to a 45-item pilot HARASS measure through the use of multiple content experts in domestic violence, including battered women survivors. Several of these experts rated the fit and clarity of harassing items. Content validity is greatly enhanced when experts use quantification to assist in evaluating item content (Imle & Atwood, 1988; Mishel, 1989).

Construct Validity

Construct validity describes how well an instrument measures the concept it was designed to measure. To explore convergent construct validity, correlations—among the ISA-Combined, ISA-Physical, and ISA-Nonphysical

subscale total scores, the DA total score, and the OFTEN and DISTRESS mean scores—were calculated on the 45-item pilot HARASS tool. To determine whether to use item mean scores or total scores on the ISA, correlations were done among them. The correlations on the ISA-Combined, ISA-Physical, and ISA-Nonphysical item means ranged from 95% to 100%. The ISA is a weighted scale with physical and nonphysical abuse cut-scores based in part on total scores. Because ISA total scores are more clinically useful and the item scores correlated highly with total scores, subsequent analysis will address total scores on all ISA scales.

The correlations among all measures used in Campbell's (1997) and King and Ryan's (1997) studies were examined for the combined samples and separately for Campbell's sample and for King and Ryan's sample. It was theoretically expected that all of the above correlations would be strongly positive as evidence of construct validity. There are no well accepted criteria for correlations that support or discount convergent construct validity (Mishel, 1989). According to Nunnally (1978), it is more important that the correlations behave as expected and fit in a lawful way based on logical theories. Nunnally (1978) states that measures that correlate too highly with one another are most probably measuring the same construct, while measures that have little to no correlation measure unrelated constructs. This researcher estimated, theoretically, that the correlations between the combined sample 45-item pilot HARASS and the ISA and DA would be approximately .50, indicating a moderately strong correlation but not redundancy.

While interrelated with the concept of harassment in the process of leaving abusive relationships, the ISA and DA were not designed as measures of harassment per se, nor was the measure of harassment expected to completely overlap with measures of abuse or danger of homicide. Further, this researcher predicted that the relationship between the 45-item pilot HARASS would more closely correlate with the DA than with the ISA. However, in the present study, the opposite relationship occurred most of the time. The combined sample's 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN mean score was statistically and positively correlated ($r = .49$) with the DA, which was very near the predicted level. However, the combined sample's 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN mean score was even more strongly positively correlated with the ISA-Combined, the ISA-Physical, and the ISA-Nonphysical total scores ($r = .63, .65,$ and $.60$, respectively) (see Table 10). The combined sample DISTRESS mean score of the 45-item pilot HARASS behaved very similarly (see Table 10). It was positively correlated ($r = .47$) with the DA total score near the predicted value. The 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean score was significantly positively correlated with the ISA-Combined, the ISA-Physical, and the ISA-Nonphysical total scores ($r = .63, .65,$ and $.58$, respectively).

When the combined and Campbell's abused-only case scores were intercorrelated (see Tables 11 and 12) the same relationships as described above resulted. All of the correlations were positive and significant, with the DA total score correlating less with the HARASS OFTEN and HARASS DISTRESS mean scale scores than the various ISA scales.

Table 10

45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure, Combined Sample – All Cases

| Measures | 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non- physical total score |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------------------|--------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | r = 1.00 n = 144 | r = .97** n = 141 | r = .49* n = 33 | r = .63** n = 126 | r = .65** n = 126 | r = .60** n = 126 |
| 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | r = 1.00 n = 141 | r = .47* n = 33 | r = .63** n = 126 | r = .65** n = 126 | r = .58** n = 40 |
| DA total score | | | r = 1.00 n = 33 | r = .39* n = 28 | r = .43* n = 28 | r = .32* n = 28 |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | r = 1.00 n = 126 | r = .94** n = 126 | r = .98** n = 126 |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | r = 1.00 n = 126 | r = .86** n = 126 |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | r = 1.00 n = 126 |

* p < .05. ** p < .001.

Table 11

45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: Combined Sample, Abused Cases – Correlations With Other Scales

| Measures | 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non-physical total score |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------------|-------------------------|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|------------------------------|
| 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 103$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 101$ | $r = .42^*$ $n = 23$ | $r = .68^{**}$ $n = 103$ | $r = .68^{**}$ $n = 103$ | $r = .62^{**}$ $n = 103$ |
| 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 101$ | $r = .42^*$ $n = 23$ | $r = .66^{**}$ $n = 103$ | $r = .68^{**}$ $n = 101$ | $r = .60^{**}$ $n = 101$ |
| DA total score | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 23$ | $r = .24^a$ $n = 23$ | $r = .29^a$ $n = 23$ | $r = .17^a$ $n = 23$ |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 103$ | $r = .91^{**}$ $n = 103$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 103$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 103$ | $r = .77^{**}$ $n = 103$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 103$ |

^aNot significant.* $p < .05$. ** $p < .001$.

Table 12

45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: Campbell's (1997) Abused Cases – Correlations With Other Scale

| Measures | 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non-physical total score |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------------|-------------------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 53$ | $r = .95^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .42^*$ $n = 23$ | $r = .51^{**}$ $n = 53$ | $r = .50^{**}$ $n = 53$ | $r = .45^{**}$ $n = 53$ |
| 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | $r = .42^*$ $n = 23$ | $r = .51^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .54^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .43^*$ $n = 51$ |
| DA total score | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 23$ | $r = .24^a$ $n = 23$ | $r = .29^a$ $n = 23$ | $r = .17^a$ $n = 23$ |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 53$ | $r = .84^{**}$ $n = 53$ | $r = .95^{**}$ $n = 53$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 53$ | $r = .63^{**}$ $n = 53$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 53$ |

^aNot abused.* $p < .05$. ** $p < .001$.

The predicted relationship of the HARASS tool being more highly correlated with the DA than the ISA scales was found only in Campbell's sample of all cases (see Table 13). The 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and the 45-item pilot HARASS DISTRESS mean scores positively and significantly correlated with the DA total scores near the predicted values ($r = .49$ and $.47$, respectively). The 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scale mean scores were also positively and significantly correlated to all the ISA scores, ranging from $r = .36$ to $r = .43$ (see Table 13).

Correlations between the HARASS scales, the DA, and the ISA scales could not be explored in King and Ryan's (1997) sample because the DA was not administered. However, in King and Ryan's total sample (see Table 14) and the abused sample (see Table 15), the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS mean scores positively and significantly correlated to all of the ISA total scale scores similarly to the correlations found in all cases and the abused cases of the combined sample.

None of the correlations among scale scores in any of the participant samples were greater than $.70$. Therefore, while it appears that in these samples the HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales are more closely related to the ISA than to the DA, the 45-item pilot HARASS measures showed strong evidence of convergent construct validity with the DA and the ISA without being redundant.

This difference in the predicted and actual strengths of the correlations between the 45-item pilot HARASS measures, the DA tool, and the ISA scales may be

Table 13

45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: All of Campbell's (1997) Cases – Correlations With Other Scale Scores

| Measures | 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non-physical total score |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------------|-------------------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 93$ | $r = .96^{**}$ $n = 90$ | $r = .49^*$ $n = 33$ | $r = .41^{**}$ $n = 75$ | $r = .41^{**}$ $n = 75$ | $r = .37^{**}$ $n = 75$ |
| 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 90$ | $r = .47^*$ $n = 33$ | $r = .40^{**}$ $n = 73$ | $r = .43^{**}$ $n = 73$ | $r = .36^*$ $n = 73$ |
| DA total score | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 33$ | $r = .39^*$ $n = 28$ | $r = .43^*$ $n = 28$ | $r = .32^a$ $n = 28$ |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 75$ | $r = .91^{**}$ $n = 75$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 75$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 75$ | $r = .80^{**}$ $n = 75$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 75$ |

^aNot significant.

* $p < .05$. ** $p < .001$.

Table 14

45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: King and Ryan's (1997) Total Sample – Correlations With Other Scale Scores

| Measures | 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non-physical total score |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------------|----------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 51$ | Not collected | $r = .68^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .69^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .62^{**}$ $n = 51$ |
| 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | Not collected | $r = .64^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .66^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .58^{**}$ $n = 51$ |
| DA total score | | | Not collected | Not collected | Not collected | Not collected |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | $r = .92^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 51$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | $r = .79^{**}$ $n = 51$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ |

* $p < .05$. ** $p < .001$.

Table 15

45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: King and Ryan's (1997) Abused Sample – Correlations With Other Scale Scores

| Measures | 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non-physical total score |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------------|----------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| 45-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 50$ | Not collected | $r = .66^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .67^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .59^{**}$ $n = 50$ |
| 45-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ | Not collected | $r = .61^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .63^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .54^{**}$ $n = 50$ |
| DA total score | | | Not collected | Not collected | Not collected | Not collected |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ | $r = .91^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .96^{**}$ $n = 50$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ | $r = .76^{**}$ $n = 50$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ |

** $p < .001$.

related to error associated with sampling issues. King and Ryan's (1997) sample of shelter-based women, theoretically, involved women in abusive intimate relationships that were in more danger of abuse than Campbell's (1997) sample of community-based women at Time 3 of a longitudinal study. However, the DA was not collected on King and Ryan's sample, and the number of DA scores from Campbell's study was low ($n = 33$) at data collection Time 3, when many of these women were not actively viewing their relationships as abusive. In general, however, all of the correlations behaved as expected in a logical fashion (Nunnally, 1978). The positive and significant correlations were not too highly correlated, thus lending to support that the HARASS measures, the DA tool, and the ISA scales measure are related but separate constructs (Nunnally, 1978).

Factor Analysis

A construct validating process that has often been used by nurse researchers is factor analysis (Mishel, 1989). Mishel (1989), however, cautions against using factor analysis as a measure of construct validity unless the dimensions of the construct have been well developed. Nunnally (1978) describes using factor analysis on measures with underdeveloped construct dimensions as "shotgun empiricism" (p. 389). However, if the researcher has identified a priori theoretical factors, then a rotated factor analysis can help establish construct validity (Mishel, 1989; Nunnally, 1978). Factor analysis procedures will be addressed further in the discussion of Research Question 3 and in Chapter IV.

Contrasted Groups Approach to Validity

When groups are predicted to be significantly different, validity can be estimated using a contrasted groups approach (Waltz et al., 1991) which has also been described as a known group's technique (Polit & Hungler, 1983). Theoretically, this researcher predicted that the two samples would have comparable demographic variables and that the scores from both groups would identify them as abused as measured by the ISA and harassed as measured by the HARASS scales. Nevertheless, the level of abuse and harassment experienced by King and Ryan's (1997) emergency shelter-based participants was expected to be higher than Campbell's (1997) community-based participants.

As expected, King and Ryan's participants scored higher on the ISA-Physical, ISA-Nonphysical, and ISA-Combined when compared to Campbell's participants (see Tables 7 and 8). In addition, the shelter-based participants were twice as often harassed as measured by the 45-item pilot HARASS tool, and they found the harassing behaviors more distressing (see Table 7). The differences between the two samples were statistically significant on the ISA-Physical, ISA-Nonphysical, and ISA-Combined using t tests with equal variance of means. While the two samples differed significantly on the level of abuse, Levene's Test for Equality of Variance was not significant, thus supporting that the samples were equally variable on the concept of abuse.

However, t tests comparing the two samples on the 45-item pilot HARASS measure were significant on the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales even after Levene's

Test for Equality of Variances demonstrated inequality of variance ($p = .002$ and $.013$, respectively) (Polit, 1996). These findings produced slightly lower absolute t values and markedly reduced and fractional degrees of freedom as compared to reporting equal-variance t -test results.

Summary

The 45-item pilot HARASS tool had Cronbach's coefficient alphas on the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales of $.96$ and $.95$, respectively. These scores helped answer part of Research Question 1, primarily supporting the reliability of the 45-item pilot HARASS tool. However, the high alphas also supported the need for item reduction. Correlations among scale scores in all samples (combined and separate) and in all cases and abused cases only, supported the convergent construct validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales via all positive and mostly significant correlations between the 45-item pilot HARASS scales, the ISA, and the DA. Validity was further supported by a contrasted groups approach that demonstrated King and Ryan's shelter-based participants viewed themselves as more abused, more often harassed, and more distressed from the harassment than Campbell's community-based participants. While Campbell's participants experienced harassing behaviors from their abusive male partners, they reported those behaviors to be far less distressing. In general, the convergent construct validity and the contrasted groups approach to validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS tool with the ISA scales and the DA was supported, completing Research Question 1.

Research Question 2

The following section addresses Research Question 2: What is the fewest number of items that supports the reliability and validity of the HARASS measure? As described in the above sections, the 45-item pilot HARASS measure had item redundancy as indicated by high Cronbach's alphas on the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales (.96 and .95, respectively). The 45-item pilot HARASS data from Campbell's (1997) study and King and Ryan's (1997) study were combined and examined for item performance, scale performance, and fit within the theoretical construct of harassment in order to identify redundant items. In addition, the 45-item pilot HARASS measure was examined via an exploratory factor analysis. Based on the above explorations, the 45-item pilot HARASS measure was shortened to 23 items and re-explored with additional factor analysis, estimates of reliability and validity using scores on the ISA and the DA to demonstrate convergent construct validity.

Statistical Redundancy

Several items in the 54-item HARASS tool were retained in the 45-item pilot measure to evaluate whether the items were redundant and/or to help determine which item provided a better fit for the harassing behavior in question. Specifically, 7 sets of items were thought to contain redundant items. In Set 1, for example, Item 4 (threatens to harm our pet) and Item 5 (intentionally harms our pet) tap similar domains of abusive behavior directed at pets. In Set 2, concerns about threats of having the woman's children taken from her were thought to be dually tapped in Item 8 (threatens to have the kids taken away from me) and Item 17 (threatens to snatch the kids if I

leave him). In Set 3, Item 21 (frightens my family) was expected to be redundant with Item 34 (frightens my friends) because from clinical experience, battered women often discuss, simultaneously, both types of abuser behavior.

In Set 4, the following five items were all thought to be related to stalking-like behaviors: Item 14 (follows me); Item 18 (comes to my home when I don't want him there); Item 28 (shows up without warning); Item 32 (sits in his car outside my home); and Item 35 (keeps showing up wherever I am). Therefore, one or more of them could be statistically redundant with the others.

In Set 5, the following five items were thought to be potentially statistically redundant because they related to either the destruction or manipulation of property: Item 10 (messes with my car - for example: cuts the tires, breaks the windshield); Item 11 (destroys my property - for example breaks my furniture, rips up my clothes); Item 20 (takes my property - for example: checks, food stamps, car, jewelry, VCR, TV); Item 26 (buys me or sends me things that I don't want); and Item 44 (sold things I own without my consent).

In Set 6, three items that explored threatening behaviors by the abuser were thought to possibly be statistically redundant: Item 13 (calls me on the phone and hangs up); Item 25 (threatens to kill me if I leave or stay away from him); and Item 43 (leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine). Finally, in Set 7, Item 10 (messes with my car - for example: cuts the tires, breaks the windshield) and Item 39 (interferes with my efforts to go to school) seemed conceptually related to isolating behaviors and were thought to possibly be statistically redundant.

Two sets of statistically redundant behaviors found. Inter-item correlations of $r = .70$ or greater were considered evidence of redundancy (Mishel, 1989). A reliability analysis with a correlation matrix on the combined sample ($n = 124$) demonstrated statistical redundancy in only two sets of items. As expected, Item 4 (threatens to harm our pet) and Item 5 (intentionally harms our pet) were highly correlated on the OFTEN ($r = .93$) and DISTRESS ($r = .93$) scales. Item 14 (follows me) and Item 35 (keeps showing up wherever I am) were also significantly correlated on the OFTEN ($r = .72$) and the DISTRESS ($r = .71$) scales.

Items were deleted within each of the redundant item sets based on item-total mean scores and evidence of homogeneity. Evidence of homogeneity was provided by the corrected item-total scale correlation score since it correlates an item with the total of all other items excluding itself. For this correlation, higher values are more desirable than lower scores (DeVellis, 1991). Initially, corrected item-total scale scores between $r = .30$ and $r = .70$ criterion limits were adopted as evidence of homogeneity (Mishel, 1989). Scores between the more conservative r values of .50 and .65 were preferred for a scale that is longer than necessary. Items with corrected item-scale total correlation scores above $r = .65$ were individually assessed for possible redundancy (Mishel, 1989).

Even though Item 4 and Item 5 had evidence of similar item-total homogeneity ($r = .41$ and $.45$, respectively), Item 4 was retained because it had a slightly higher item mean score than Item 5 ($M = .53$ and $.46$, respectively) (see Table 16). Item 14 (follows me) had a slightly higher item mean score ($M = 1.39$) than Item 35 (keeps

Table 16

Item Performance of Individual Items in the 45-Item HARASS OFTEN Scale With Combined Samples

| OFTEN Item # | <u>M</u> | <u>SD</u> | # of correlations ≥ .30 | Percentage of correlations ≥ .30) | Corrected item total scale correlation | Alpha if item deleted | # of negative correlations |
|-----------------|----------|-----------|-------------------------------|--|---|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 1 | 1.45 | 1.49 | 19/44 | .43 | .48 | .96 | 1 |
| 2 | 1.11 | 1.32 | 33/44 | .75 | .67 | .96 | 0 |
| 3 | .43 | .85 | 10/44 | .23 | .38 | .96 | 0 |
| 4 | .53 | 1.16 | 12/44 | .27 | .41 | .96 | 0 |
| 5 | .46 | 1.02 | 15/44 | .34 | .45 | .96 | 0 |
| 6 | .57 | 1.20 | 36/44 | .82 | .65 | .96 | 0 |
| 7 | .94 | 1.37 | 24/44 | .55 | .51 | .96 | 0 |
| 8 | .94 | 1.37 | 29/44 | .66 | .57 | .96 | 0 |
| 9 | .63 | 1.29 | 36/44 | .82 | .59 | .96 | 0 |
| 10 | .73 | 1.33 | 36/44 | .82 | .61 | .96 | 0 |
| 11 | 1.67 | 1.51 | 37/44 | .84 | .65 | .96 | 0 |

(Table continues)

Table 16 (Continued)

| OFTEN Item # | <u>M</u> | <u>SD</u> | # of correlations ≥ .30 | Percentage of correlations ≥ .30) | Corrected item total scale correlation | Alpha if item deleted | # of negative correlations |
|-----------------|----------|-----------|-------------------------------|--|---|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 12 | 1.15 | 1.58 | 34/44 | .77 | .62 | .96 | 0 |
| 13 | 1.22 | 1.46 | 32/44 | .73 | .60 | .96 | 0 |
| 14 | 1.39 | 1.53 | 40/44 | .91 | .76 | .96 | 0 |
| 15 | 1.93 | 1.62 | 22/44 | .50 | .48 | .96 | 0 |
| 16 | 2.46 | 1.52 | 33/44 | .75 | .63 | .96 | 0 |
| 17 | .77 | 1.37 | 24/44 | .55 | .49 | .96 | 0 |
| 18 | 1.54 | 1.64 | 26/44 | .59 | .56 | .96 | 0 |
| 19 | .80 | 1.44 | 33/44 | .75 | .62 | .96 | 0 |
| 20 | 1.24 | 1.56 | 25/44 | .57 | .56 | .96 | 0 |
| 21 | 1.13 | 1.46 | 30/44 | .68 | .58 | .96 | 1 |
| 22 | 1.06 | 1.51 | 25/44 | .57 | .55 | .96 | 0 |
| 23 | .83 | 1.37 | 39/44 | .89 | .71 | .96 | 0 |

(Table continues)

Table 16 (Continued)

| OFTEN Item # | <u>M</u> | <u>SD</u> | # of correlations ≥ .30 | Percentage of correlations ≥ .30) | Corrected item total scale correlation | Alpha if item deleted | # of negative correlations |
|-----------------|----------|-----------|-------------------------------|--|---|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 24 | .44 | 1.12 | 29/44 | .66 | .58 | .96 | 1 |
| 25 | 1.41 | 1.63 | 38/44 | .86 | .70 | .96 | 0 |
| 26 | .84 | 1.23 | 31/44 | .70 | .53 | .96 | 1 |
| 27 | 1.62 | 1.60 | 27/44 | .61 | .51 | .96 | 0 |
| 28 | 1.68 | 1.62 | 33/44 | .86 | .62 | .96 | 0 |
| 29 | 1.57 | 1.62 | 30/44 | .68 | .55 | .96 | 0 |
| 30 | .52 | 1.25 | 40/44 | .91 | .72 | .96 | 0 |
| 31 | .48 | 1.16 | 35/44 | .80 | .66 | .96 | 1 |
| 32 | .83 | 1.44 | 36/44 | .82 | .69 | .96 | 0 |
| 33 | .68 | 1.33 | 33/44 | .75 | .64 | .96 | 0 |
| 34 | .96 | 1.45 | 34/44 | .77 | .67 | .96 | 0 |
| 35 | 1.28 | 1.51 | 38/44 | .86 | .69 | .96 | 0 |

(Table continues)

Table 16 (Continued)

| OFTEN Item # | <u>M</u> | <u>SD</u> | # of correlations ≥ .30 | Percentage of correlations ≥ .30) | Corrected item total scale correlation | Alpha if item deleted | # of negative correlations |
|-----------------|----------|-----------|-------------------------------|--|---|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| 36 | 1.17 | 1.40 | 37/44 | .84 | .69 | .96 | 0 |
| 37 | 1.73 | 1.57 | 15/44 | .34 | .42 | .96 | 0 |
| 38 | .47 | 1.17 | 0/44 | 0.00 | .13 | .96 | 8 |
| 39 | 1.38 | 1.56 | 20/44 | .45 | .46 | .96 | 0 |
| 40 | 1.11 | 1.46 | 40/44 | .91 | .70 | .96 | 0 |
| 41 | .32 | .96 | 20/44 | .45 | .48 | .96 | 0 |
| 42 | 1.81 | 1.54 | 26/44 | .59 | .53 | .96 | 0 |
| 43 | .57 | 1.21 | 23/44 | .52 | .48 | .96 | 0 |
| 44 | 1.00 | 1.52 | 33/44 | .75 | .61 | .96 | 1 |
| 45 | .57 | 1.30 | 18/44 | .41 | .46 | .96 | 0 |

showing up wherever I am) ($\underline{M} = 1.28$) and a better corrected item-total scale correlation ($\underline{r} = .76$ and $.69$, respectively), therefore, it was considered for retention. However, Item 35 was retained because of the more conservative correlation criteria and because it helped support convergent construct validity, as will be discussed later in this chapter. Removing Items 5 and 14 did not change the Cronbach's reliability coefficient alphas ($\alpha = .96$) of the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales (see Table 16).

Item Performance

Items were next examined for possible deletion by examining their item performances. Item performance on the OFTEN scale was prioritized over item performance on the DISTRESS scale since the behaviors described by the items had to occur in order to produce a distress level. Poorly performing items were identified as having low corrected item-total scale correlations, negative correlations with other items on the scale, a low percentage of inter-item correlations greater than or equal to $\underline{r} = .30$, low item mean scores and/or the item contained wording that apparently prevented the item from being answered by many respondents. Three items were deleted by this process: Items 3, 38, and 45 (see Table 16). The most problematic item deleted was Item 38 (plays games with the child support check). This item had: no inter-item correlations above $\underline{r} = .30$; a corrected item-scale total correlation of only $\underline{r} = .13$; a low item mean score ($\underline{M} = .47$); and was negatively correlated with eight items. Item 3 (falsely accuses me of child abuse) was deleted, primarily because it had only 10 (23%) inter-item correlations above $\underline{r} = .30$ and a low item mean score

($M = .43$). Item 45 (refuses to grant me a divorce) was deleted, in part because it had a low item mean score ($M = .57$) but primarily because the wording of the item excluded unmarried respondents from answering the item. Removing Items 38, 3, and 45 did not change Cronbach's coefficient alphas of the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN scale (see Table 16).

Lack of Fit Within the Construct of Harassment While Leaving Abusive Relationships

After removal of five items due to redundancy and item performance, the remaining 40 items on the pilot HARASS measure were evaluated for conceptual fit with the construct of harassment of abused women in the process of leaving abusive relationships. Eight items were deleted because this researcher determined from review of domestic homicide and dangerousness literature (Boulette & Andersen, 1985; Browne, 1987; Campbell, 1992; Ewing, 1987; Johnson, 1995; Jones, 1980; Wilson & Daley, 1993) and extensive clinical experiences that the behaviors described by these items were not unique to harassment of abused women while in the process of leaving abusive relationships (Fishwick, 1993; Landenburger, 1989, 1993; May, 1990; Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995; Ulrich, 1991, 1993). For example, Item 15 (tries getting money from me) is a financially manipulative behavior that can occur anytime in an abusive relationship and can even occur in relationships that are nonabusive. Item 16 (tries to stop me from seeing other people) is an isolating behavior that can occur anytime in an abusive relationship. Item 26 (buys me or sends me things that I don't want) is a behavior that can begin during the courting phase of a future abusive relationship and can also occur in nonabusive relationships. Item 27 (gets himself in

crisis to keep me near him) is a manipulative and isolating behavior that can occur very early in the abusive relationship. Item 37 (agrees to pay certain bills then doesn't pay them) is not unique to abusive relationships as many divorced couples can attest. Item 39 (interferes with my efforts to go to school) is an isolating behavior that usually occurs much earlier in the abusive relationship. Item 40 (uses his connections to make my life difficult) is a controlling behavior that fosters the woman's dependence on the abuser but is not limited to the period of leaving. Finally, Item 42 (tells other people that I am crazy) is part of ongoing psychological abuse and not unique to the process of leaving the abusive relationship. While not unique to harassment of women leaving abusive relationships, many of these behaviors are consistent with items identified as psychologically abusive in prior instrument development studies: the Conflict Tactics Scale (Straus, 1979); the Index of Spouse Abuse (Hudson & McIntosh, 1981); the Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (Tolman, 1989); the Partner Abuse Scale–Physical and the Partner Abuse Scale–Nonphysical (Attala et al., 1994; Attala, Oetker, & McSweeney, 1995); the Severity of Violence Against Women Scale (Marshall, 1992); the Abusive Behavior Inventory (Shepard & Campbell, 1992); and the Measure of Wife Abuse (Rodenburg & Fantuzzo, 1993). Removing these eight items due to questionable conceptual fit did not change the Cronbach's reliability coefficient alphas of the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN scale (see Table 16).

Deletion of Conceptually Redundant Items

The remaining 32 items from the pilot HARASS measure were reviewed by this researcher for conceptual redundancy. Twelve items in four sets appeared to be conceptually redundant. Most of the items in these sets had been identified previously and were thought a priori to be statistically redundant ($r > .70$). The decisions to retain or delete items from each of the four sets were primarily based on a review of corrected item-total scale correlations and item means discussed earlier in this chapter. Though corrected item-scale total correlation scores between $r = .30$ and $.70$ were established as evidence of homogeneity (Mishel, 1989), the more conservative range of $r = .50$ to $.65$ was preferred.

The first set contained two items related to threats of having children taken: Item 8 (threatens to have the kids taken away from me) and Item 17 (threatens to snatch the kids if I leave him). Both items are experienced as the threatened loss of the women's children and are threats frequently used by male intimates as women try to leave abusive relationships. The item mean scores for Items 8 and 17 (see Table 16) were $.94$ and $.77$, respectively. Item 8 met the more conservative criteria for the corrected item-total scale correlation than did Item 17 ($r = .57$ and $.49$, respectively). Item 8 was retained because of its higher item mean score and evidence of corrected item-total correlation.

In the second set, Item 21 (frightens my family) was conceptually redundant with Item 34 (frightens my friends). Both abuser behaviors frighten people who are emotionally close to the women and who would be part of her social support network

during the process of leaving. The item mean scores for Items 21 and Item 34 were 1.13 and .96, respectively (see Table 16). Item 21 met a more conservative criterion for homogeneity than did Item 34 ($r = .58$ and $.67$, respectively). Item 21 was retained because of its higher item mean score and evidence of better homogeneity.

Items in the third set related to destruction or manipulation of property: Item 10 (messes with my car), Item 11 (destroys my property), Item 20 (takes my property), and Item 44 (sold things I own without my consent) were conceptually redundant. All four abuser behaviors have been described by women in the process of leaving, especially those that result in damage and/or destruction of possessions that have sentimental value to the women. The item mean scores for Items 10, 11, 20, and 44 were .73, 1.67, 1.24 and 1.00, respectively (see Table 16). All of the items had conservative measures of homogeneity ($r = .61$, $.65$, $.56$, and $.61$, respectively). Item 11 was retained because of its higher item mean score and because it had the highest evidence of homogeneity among the items that had conservative homogeneity.

The fourth set was related to threatening behaviors: Item 23 (uses his friends or family to send me threatening messages), Item 24 (leaves notes on my car), Item 30 (sends me threatening letters), and Item 43 (leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine) were conceptually redundant. All these threatening behaviors have been described by women in the process of leaving abusive relationships. The item mean scores for Items 23, 24, 30 and 43 were .83, .44, .52, and .57, respectively (see Table 16). Item 24 and Item 43 had conservative measures of homogeneity ($r = .58$ and $.48$, respectively). Item 23 and Item 30 had measures of

homogeneity that suggested possible item redundancy ($r = .71$ and $.72$, respectively). While Item 43 had a high item mean score and a conservative measure of homogeneity, it was not retained because its inclusion did not support the theoretically expected positive correlation between the HARASS measure and the DA. Instead, Item 30, which had an adequate item mean score but a slightly redundant measure of homogeneity, was retained because its inclusion in the reduced item set of HARASS items helped support the convergent construct validity of the HARASS measure with the DA. Removing these eight conceptually redundant items resulted in a 24-item HARASS item set that changed the Cronbach's reliability coefficient alphas from $.96$ to $.93$ on the HARASS OFTEN scale and from $.95$ to $.92$ on the DISTRESS scale.

Factor Analysis and Resulting Reliability of a Reduced Set of Items

After the 45-item pilot HARASS measure was reduced to 24 items, the reliability coefficient alphas were still high enough to indicate redundancy (Nunnally, 1978) but well within the range one might expect for a new measure tested on small samples (DeVellis, 1991). To look for possible item outliers (Nunnally, 1978), a factor analysis with principal components extraction was used to estimate the number of factors, presence of outliers, absence of multicollinearity, and factorability of the correlation matrices with varimax rotation (Tabachnick & Fidell, 1989, 1996). Initially, six factors with Eigen values greater than 1.000 were extracted by the computer. Then using a principal factors extraction with varimax rotation (Tabachnick & Fidell, 1989, 1996) the number of factors was systematically reduced by this researcher to three (see Table 17), at which time all of the items except Item 1 loaded

Table 17

Varimax Rotated Factor Loadings of 23-Item HARASS Forced into Three Factors With Preliminary Subscale Identification

| Item # | Items with factor loadings Behavior | Factors | | |
|--------|--|------------------------------|----------------------------|---|
| | | 1 Stalking-like behaviors | 2 Threatening behaviors | 3 Controlling his commodities: children, property and forced sex |
| 2 | Scares me with a weapon | .34 | .50 ^a | .32 |
| 4 | Threatens to harm pet | .02 | .43 ^a | .21 |
| 6 | Threatens to harm kids if I leave | .30 | .33 | .53 ^a |
| 7 | Bothers me at work | .23 | .54 ^a | .05 |
| 8 | Threatens to take kids away | .18 | .16 | .76 ^a |
| 9 | Tries getting me fired | .16 | .63 ^a | .22 |
| 11 | Destroys my property | .28 | .39 | .45 ^a |
| 12 | Threatens to kill self if I leave | .31 | .51 ^a | .21 |
| 13 | Calls me on the phone and hangs up | .47 ^a | .44 | .09 |

(Table continues)

Table 17 (Continued)

| Item # | Behavior | Factors | | |
|--------|---------------------------------------|------------------------------|----------------------------|---|
| | | 1 Stalking-like behaviors | 2 Threatening behaviors | 3 Controlling his commodities: children, property and forced sex |
| 18 | Comes to my home | .80 ^a | .00 | .25 |
| 19 | Ignores court orders to stay away | .50 ^a | .32 | .24 |
| 21 | Frightens my family | .29 | .47 ^a | .26 |
| 22 | Uses kids as pawns to get close to me | .14 | .20 | .76 ^a |
| 25 | Threatens to kill me if I leave him | .39 | .49 ^a | .34 |
| 28 | Shows up without warning | .68 ^a | .22 | .15 |
| 29 | Feels like he can again force sex | .33 | .17 | .49 ^a |
| 30 | Sends me threatening letters | .32 | .61 ^a | .29 |
| 31 | Breaks into my home | .55 ^a | .39 | .21 |
| 32 | Sits in his car outside my home | .66 ^a | .34 | .23 |

(Table continues)

Table 17 (Continued)

| Item # | Behavior | Factors | | |
|--------|--------------------------------|------------------------------|----------------------------|---|
| | | 1 Stalking-like behaviors | 2 Threatening behaviors | 3 Controlling his commodities: children, property and forced sex |
| 33 | Pretends to be someone else | .51 ^a | .46 | .08 |
| 35 | Keeps showing up where I am | .67 ^a | .27 | .23 |
| 36 | Takes things that belong to me | .56 ^a | .29 | .31 |
| 41 | Reports me to the authorities | .19 | .33 | .35 ^a |

^aHighest loading factor

into three factors. Item 1 (uses my family or friends to pressure me to stay in the relationship), therefore, was identified as a possible outlier and deleted from the scale. Deleting Item 1 from the original 45-item pilot HARASS item set helped the analysis in three ways. First, its deletion contributed toward a significant positive correlation total score ($r = .47, p < .05$). Second, the rotated three-factor structure loaded the remaining 23 HARASS items into three preliminary subscale groupings. These groupings had logical support in the literature and were named:

1. Stalking-like behaviors;
2. Threatening behaviors; and
3. Controlling his commodities - behaviors that effect children, property, and forced sex.

Stalking-like behaviors are described in the domestic homicide, dangerousness, and recapture literature (Campbell, 1992; Browne, 1987; Ewing, 1987; Jones, 1980; Wilson & Daley, 1993) as threatening behaviors by abusive males toward women in the process of leaving (Fishwick, 1993; Landenburger, 1989, 1993; May, 1990; Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995; Ulrich, 1991, 1993). The abusers' treatment of children, property, and sex as objects within his sphere of control has been well documented (Browne, 1987; Campbell, 1992; Ewing, 1987; Jones, 1980; Fishwick, 1993; Landenburger, 1989, 1993; May, 1990; Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995; Ulrich, 1991, 1993; Wilson & Daley, 1993) and clinically escalates during the process of leaving. The three preliminary subscales of stalking, threats, and controlling his commodities are also congruent with the behaviors identified as harassing by the domestic violence

nurse experts consulted in the early conceptualization of the initial 54-item HARASS measure.

Ideally, there should be from 5 to 10 subjects per item for analysis of possible subscales (Brink & Wood, 1989). Therefore, the more conservative ideal sample size for a 23-item scale is 230. The total study sample ($N = 144$) falls short of the ideal but above the least conservative recommended sample size of 115. In addition, further support for three potential subscales was provided by calculating Cronbach's alphas for each set of items that loaded on the three factors. These were $\alpha = .89$ for items describing stalking-like behaviors; $\alpha = .84$ for items describing threatening behaviors; and $\alpha = .81$ for abuser behavior items that view children, property, and sex as commodities. These alpha scores support the reliability of the subscales (DeVellis, 1991).

Finally, the deletion of Item 1 from a 24-item HARASS scale did not change the Cronbach's reliability coefficient alphas. The 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN scale reliability coefficient alpha on the combined sample was .93, and the 23-item reduced HARASS DISTRESS scale reliability coefficient alpha was .92. Table 18 provides a graphical summary of the serial process of item deletion, while Table 19 identifies the 23-item reduced HARASS measure of abuser behaviors.

The 23-item reduced HARASS scales also had markedly improved coefficient alphas when assessed for separate samples, with all cases combined and with only abused cases (see Table 9). In Campbell's (1997) sample and King and Ryan's (1997) sample of all cases, the alphas for the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN scale were

Table 18

45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure: Item Numbers of Those Deleted or Retained

| Statistically redundant | Deleted items | | | 23 retained HARASS items |
|----------------------------|---------------|-----------------------------|---------------------------|--------------------------------|
| | Problematic | Not unique to harassment | Conceptually redundant | |
| 5 | 1 | 15 | 10 | 2 |
| 14 | 3 | 16 | 17 | 4 |
| | 38 | 26 | 20 | 6 |
| | 45 | 27 | 23 | 7 |
| | | 37 | 24 | 8 |
| | | 39 | 34 | 9 |
| | | 40 | 43 | 11 |
| | | 42 | 44 | 12 |
| | | | | 13 |
| | | | | 18 |
| | | | | 19 |
| | | | | 21 |
| | | | | 22 |
| | | | | 25 |
| | | | | 28 |
| | | | | 29 |
| | | | | 30 |
| | | | | 31 |
| | | | | 32 |
| | | | | 33 |

(Table continues)

Table 18 (Continued)

| Statistically redundant | Deleted items | | | 23 retained HARASS items |
|----------------------------|---------------|-----------------------------|---------------------------|--------------------------------|
| | Problematic | Not unique to harassment | Conceptually redundant | |
| | | | | 35 |
| | | | | 36 |
| | | | | 41 |

.91 and .92, respectively. The 23-item reduced HARASS DISTRESS scale alphas in these samples were .91 and .90, respectively. In Campbell's sample and King and Ryan's sample of abused cases the alphas for the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN scale were .91 and .92 respectively. The 23-item reduced HARASS DISTRESS scale alphas for these abused samples were .92 and .89, respectively.

Convergent Construct Validity of a 23-Item Reduced HARASS Tool

Construct validity is the degree to which a tool measures the construct being studied (Polit, 1996), while convergence refers to using different methods to obtain similar results when measuring a particular concept (Brink & Wood, 1989). To explore convergent validity of the reduced-item HARASS tools, correlations among the ISA-Combined, ISA-Physical and ISA-Nonphysical scales total scores, the DA total score and the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS mean scores were calculated for all cases combined and for the abused cases in both the total and separate samples. As with the 45-item pilot HARASS measure, it was theoretically expected that all of the inter-scale correlations would be positive. The 23-item reduced

Table 19

23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure

| Item number from 45-item HARASS measure | Behavior |
|---|--|
| 2 | Scares me with a weapon |
| 4 | Threatens to harm our pet |
| 6 | Threatens to harm the kids if I leave him |
| 7 | Bothers me at work when I don't want to talk to him |
| 8 | Threatens to have the kids taken away from me |
| 9 | Tries to get me fired from my job |
| 11 | Destroys my property (for example: breaks my furniture, rips |
| 12 | Threatens to kill himself if I leave him |
| 13 | Calls me on the phone and hangs up |
| 18 | Comes to my home when I don't want him there |
| 19 | Ignores court orders to stay away from me |
| 21 | Frightens my family |
| 22 | Uses the kids as pawns to get me physically close to him |
| 25 | Threatens to kill me if I leave or stay away from him |
| 28 | Shows up without warning |
| 29 | Makes me feel like he can again force me into sex |
| 30 | Sends me threatening letters |
| 31 | Breaks into my home |
| 32 | Sits in his car outside my home |
| 33 | Pretends to be someone else in order to get to me |

(Table continues)

Table 19 (Continued)

| Item number from 45-item HARASS measure | Behavior |
|---|--|
| 35 | Keeps showing up wherever I am |
| 36 | Takes things that belong to me so I have to see him to get them back |
| 41 | Reports me to the authorities for taking drugs when I don't |

HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales for the combined sample, all cases (see Table 20), and Campbell's sample, all cases (see Table 21), were positively and significantly correlated with the DA tool and all the ISA scales. The DA, in the combined sample all cases, correlated with the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales near the predicted $r = .50$ relationship ($r = .47$ and $.45$, respectively). However, the ISA-Combined, ISA-Physical and ISA-Nonphysical total scores were all more strongly correlated with the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN mean scores ($r = .62$, $.64$, and $.57$, respectively) and DISTRESS mean scores ($r = .59$, $.63$, and $.54$, respectively) than was the DA.

In Campbell's sample of all cases, the DA total score did behave as predicted with correlations on the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN ($r = .47$) and DISTRESS ($r = .45$) scales being near the predicted values of $r = .50$. Correlations between both the reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales were higher with the DA than with the ISA-Combined, ISA-Physical, and ISA-Nonphysical (see Table 21).

Table 20

23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: Combined Samples, All Cases – Correlations With Other Scales

| Measures | 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non- physical total score |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------------------|--------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | r = 1.00 n = 144 | r = .97** n = 138 | r = .47* n = 33 | r = .62** n = 126 | r = .64** n = 126 | r = .57** n = 126 |
| 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | r = 1.00 n = 138 | r = .45* n = 32 | r = .59** n = 121 | r = .63** n = 121 | r = .54** n = 121 |
| DA total score | | | r = 1.00 n = 33 | r = .39* n = 28 | r = .43* n = 28 | r = .32* n = 28 |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | r = 1.00 n = 126 | r = .94** n = 126 | r = .98** n = 126 |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | r = 1.00 n = 126 | r = .86** n = 126 |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | r = 1.00 n = 126 |

*p < .05. ** p < .001.

Table 21

23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: All Campbell's (1997) Cases – Correlations With Other Scales

| Measures | 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non- physical total score |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------------------|-------------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 93$ | $r = .95^{**}$ $n = 87$ | $r = .47^*$ $n = 33$ | $r = .36^{**}$ $n = 75$ | $r = .39^{**}$ $n = 75$ | $r = .32^*$ $n = 75$ |
| 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 87$ | $r = .45^*$ $n = 32$ | $r = .30^*$ $n = 70$ | $r = .35^*$ $n = 70$ | $r = .25^*$ $n = 70$ |
| DA total score | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 33$ | $r = .39^*$ $n = 28$ | $r = .43^*$ $n = 28$ | $r = .32^a$ $n = 28$ |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 75$ | $r = .91^{**}$ $n = 75$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 75$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 75$ | $r = .80^{**}$ $n = 75$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 75$ |

^aNot significant.* $p < .05$. ** $p < .001$.

Although the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS correlations were positive, they only approached significance with the DA total score in the combined sample of abused cases ($r = .40$ and $.38$, respectively) (see Table 22) and in Campbell's sample of abused cases ($r = .40$ and $.38$, respectively) (see Table 23). None of the correlations among all the ISA scales and the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales in the combined and Campbell's sample (all cases) and the combined and Campbell sample of abused cases only had correlations higher than $r = .68$ (see Tables 20, 21, 22, and 23). These findings support that the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales are not redundant with the other scales when tested by the combined sample and Campbell's sample.

However, when the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales were correlated with the ISA-Physical scale in King and Ryan's (1997) sample of all cases (see Table 24), correlations were at $r = .72$ and $.70$, respectively. The 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN measure had a correlation of $r = .70$ with the ISA-Physical scale in King and Ryan's sample of abused cases (see Table 25). While correlations at $.70$ or greater suggest conceptual redundancy (Polit & Hungler, 1983), it is quite possible that these higher correlations represent the fact that a sample of sheltered abused women experience more harassment than a sample of community-based abused women, thus making possible overlap between the HARASS and the ISA in indexing the abuse.

Table 22

23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: Combined Samples, Abused Cases – Correlations With Other Scales

| Measures | 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non- physical total score |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------------|------------------------------------|-------------------------|--------------------------------|-----------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 103$ | $r = .96^{**}$ $n = 100$ | $r = .40^a$ $n = 23$ | $r = .65^{**}$ $n = 103$ | $r = .68^{**}$ $n = 103$ | $r = .58^{**}$ $n = 103$ |
| 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 100$ | $r = .38^a$ $n = 22$ | $r = .64^{**}$ $n = 100$ | $r = .68^{**}$ $n = 100$ | $r = .56^{**}$ $n = 100$ |
| DA total score | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 23$ | $r = .24^a$ $n = 23$ | $r = .29^a$ $n = 23$ | $r = .17^a$ $n = 23$ |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 103$ | $r = .91^{**}$ $n = 103$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 103$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 103$ | $r = .77^{**}$ $n = 103$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 103$ |

^aNot significant.* $p < .05$. ** $p < .001$.

Table 23

23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: Cambell's (1997) Abused Cases – Correlations With Other Scales

| Measures | 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non-physical total score |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------------|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | r = 1.00 n = 53 | r = .95** n = 50 | r = .40 ^a n = 23 | r = .43** n = 53 | r = .47** n = 53 | r = .35* n = 53 |
| 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | r = 1.00 n = 50 | r = .38 ^a n = 22 | r = .42* n = 50 | r = .49** n = 50 | r = .33* n = 50 |
| DA total score | | | r = 1.00 n = 23 | r = .24 ^a n = 23 | r = .27 ^a n = 23 | r = .17 ^a n = 23 |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | r = 1.00 n = 53 | r = .84** n = 53 | r = .95** n = 53 |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | r = 1.00 n = 53 | r = .63** n = 53 |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | r = 1.00 n = 53 |

^aNot significant.

*p < .05. **p < .001.

Table 24

23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: King and Ryan's (1997) Total Sample -- Correlations With Other Scales

| Measures | 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non-physical total score |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------------|----------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 51$ | Not collected | $r = .68^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .72^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .60^{**}$ $n = 51$ |
| 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | Not collected | $r = .65^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .70^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .57^{**}$ $n = 51$ |
| DA total score | | | Not collected | Not collected | Not collected | Not collected |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | $r = .92^{**}$ $n = 51$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 51$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ | $r = .79^{**}$ $n = 51$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 51$ |

* $p < .05$. ** $p < .001$.

Table 25

23-Item Reduced HARASS Measure: King and Ryan's (1997) Abused Sample – Correlations With Other Scales

| Measures | 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | DA total score | ISA Combined total score | ISA Physical total score | ISA Non-physical total score |
|------------------------------|---------------------------|------------------------------|----------------|----------------------------|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| 23-item HARASS OFTEN mean | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ | $r = .97^{**}$ $n = 50$ | Not collected | $r = .67^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .70^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .58^{**}$ $n = 50$ |
| 23-item HARASS DISTRESS mean | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ | Not collected | $r = .62^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .67^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .53^{**}$ $n = 50$ |
| DA total score | | | Not collected | Not collected | Not collected | Not collected |
| ISA Combined total score | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ | $r = .91^{**}$ $n = 50$ | $r = .96^{**}$ $n = 50$ |
| ISA Physical total score | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ | $r = .76^{**}$ $n = 50$ |
| ISA Nonphysical total score | | | | | | $r = 1.00$ $n = 50$ |

* $p < .05$. ** $p < .001$.

Summary

Overall, the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS measures behaved as predicted within the proposed theoretical relationship with the DA tool and the ISA scales. The correlations between the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales and the ISA scales for all cases in the combined sample, separate samples, and for abused cases were all significantly positive (see Tables 20-25). The correlations among the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales mean scores and the DA total score for all cases in the combined and Campbell's samples were significantly positive (see Tables 20 and 21). The correlations between the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales mean scores and the DA total score for abused cases in the combined and Campbell's samples were positive and approached significance (see Tables 22 and 23). There were minimal concerns about redundancy between the various measures and clinical support for expecting that a sheltered sample of abused women would experience more abuse, harassment, and distress from the harassment than a community-based abused women sample. Overall, these findings provide preliminary evidence of convergent construct validity of the 23-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales.

Contrasted Groups Approach to Validity

As with the 45-item pilot HARASS measure, the evidence of construct validity of the 23-item reduced HARASS measure was gathered using a contrasted group's approach (Waltz et al., 1991) which has also been described as a known group's

technique (Polit & Hungler, 1983). Within this construct validating technique, groups expected to differ on the level of a particular attribute are administered a measure of that attribute (Polit & Hungler, 1983). Theoretically, this researcher predicted that the two samples would have comparable demographic variables and that both groups would score abused as measured by the ISA and harassed by the 23-item reduced HARASS tool. However, as with the 45-item pilot HARASS measure, the level of abuse, measured by the ISA scales, and harassment, measured by the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales, experienced by King and Ryan's (1997) emergency shelter-based participants was expected to be higher than Campbell's (1997) community-based participants.

This prediction was validated. When t tests for independent samples (comparing abused versus nonabused) were conducted on the 23-item reduced HARASS measure, King and Ryan's (1997) participants were harassed more than twice as often as Campbell's (1997) sample ($M = 1.51$ and $.73$, respectively). King and Ryan's participants also found the harassing behaviors to be almost twice as distressing as Campbell's participants ($M = 1.74$ and $.89$, respectively) (see Table 7). These differences were significant using t tests of means with unequal variances on the OFTEN scale ($t = 5.17$, $df = 78.77$, $p < .001$) and the DISTRESS scale ($t = 5.39$, $df = 86.11$, $p < .001$).

As expected, King and Ryan's (1997) participants scored higher on the ISA-Physical, ISA-Nonphysical, and ISA-Combined when compared to Campbell's (1997)

participants, all cases (see Table 7). In addition, the shelter-based participants were twice as often harassed on the 45-item pilot HARASS tool, and they found the harassing behaviors more distressing. This significant relationship was also found when the above t tests were conducted on the abused only cases found in Campbell's and King and Ryan's samples (see Table 8).

All of the t tests comparing the two samples with the abused only and/or the combined cases on the 23-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales were significant on Levene's Test for Equality of Variances. These findings support the lack of homogeneity in variance between the two samples on the concept of harassment, thus the unequal t test results were reported (Polit, 1996). These findings produced slightly lower absolute t values and markedly reduced and fractionated degrees of freedom as compared to reporting equal variance t test results.

Summary

The above series of item reduction steps used on the 45-item pilot HARASS measure answered Research Question 2: What is the fewest number of items that supports the reliability and validity of the HARASS measure? The answer is 23 items. A list of the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN scale with item performances is found in Table 26, and a list of 23-item reduced HARASS DISTRESS scale with item performances is found in Table 27. Reliability was supported by calculating Cronbach's coefficient alphas. The alphas on the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales on the combined sample of all cases were .93 and .92,

Table 26

Item Performance of Individual Items in the 45-Item HARASS OFTEN Scale With Combined Samples

| OFTEN Item # | <u>M</u> | <u>SD</u> | Corrected item total scale correlation | Cronbach's alpha if item deleted ^a |
|-----------------|----------|-----------|--|---|
| 2 | 1.07 | 1.30 | .65 | .93 |
| 4 | .54 | 1.15 | .35 | .93 |
| 6 | .56 | 1.19 | .61 | .93 |
| 7 | .96 | 1.35 | .48 | .93 |
| 8 | .92 | 1.37 | .54 | .93 |
| 9 | .59 | 1.25 | .56 | .93 |
| 11 | 1.67 | 1.51 | .61 | .93 |
| 12 | 1.10 | 1.55 | .58 | .93 |
| 13 | 1.23 | 1.48 | .59 | .93 |
| 18 | 1.57 | 1.62 | .59 | .93 |
| 19 | .78 | 1.42 | .60 | .93 |
| 21 | 1.12 | 1.45 | .58 | .93 |
| 22 | 1.06 | 1.50 | .55 | .93 |
| 25 | 1.37 | 1.61 | .68 | .93 |
| 28 | 1.67 | 1.61 | .62 | .93 |
| 29 | 1.56 | 1.62 | .53 | .93 |
| 30 | .49 | 1.21 | .67 | .93 |
| 31 | .46 | 1.12 | .66 | .93 |
| 32 | .81 | 1.43 | .71 | .93 |
| 33 | .67 | 1.33 | .62 | .93 |

(Table continues)

Table 26 (Continued)

| OFTEN Item # | <u>M</u> | <u>SD</u> | Corrected item total scale correlation | Cronbach's alpha if item deleted ^a |
|-----------------|----------|-----------|--|---|
| 36 | 1.18 | 1.40 | .66 | .93 |
| 41 | .30 | .93 | .47 | .93 |

^aOverall item alpha = .93

respectively. Coefficient alphas on the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales were in the low .90s for all other combinations of cases and samples. While higher than desired for a mature measure, these alphas in the low .90s are acceptable for a new tool. As with the 45-item pilot HARASS, the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN scale were positively correlated to the ISA scales when the samples were evaluated combined and separately. The correlations between the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales and the ISA scales were strongest with King and Ryan's (1997) shelter sample. Consistent with the 45-item pilot HARASS, the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scale was always positively correlated to the DA on all samples; however, significance was not always achieved. In general, Campbell's (1997) sample experienced a level of harassment half that of King and Ryan's participants, and they found those behaviors almost half as distressing. The findings that sheltered women are experiencing higher levels of harassment and find that experience quite distressing compared to abused women in the community provide evidence supportive of construct validity. Use of

Table 27

Item-Total Performance 23-Item HARASS DISTRESS Scale (n = 90)

| DISTRESS Item # | <u>M</u> | <u>SD</u> | Corrected item total scale correlation | Cronbach's alpha if item deleted ^a |
|--------------------|----------|-----------|--|---|
| 2 | 1.79 | 1.83 | .64 | .91 |
| 4 | .84 | 1.55 | .23 | .92 |
| 6 | .93 | 1.66 | .62 | .92 |
| 7 | 1.20 | 1.58 | .56 | .92 |
| 8 | 1.32 | 1.76 | .46 | .92 |
| 9 | .83 | 1.55 | .57 | .92 |
| 11 | 2.29 | 1.68 | .59 | .92 |
| 12 | 1.46 | 1.76 | .42 | .92 |
| 13 | 1.39 | 1.58 | .49 | .92 |
| 18 | 2.07 | 1.78 | .49 | .92 |
| 19 | .99 | 1.61 | .58 | .92 |
| 21 | 1.61 | 1.73 | .53 | .92 |
| 22 | 1.17 | 1.64 | .52 | .92 |
| 25 | 1.91 | 1.83 | .68 | .91 |
| 28 | 2.22 | 1.67 | .56 | .92 |
| 29 | 2.00 | 1.77 | .52 | .92 |
| 30 | .72 | 1.44 | .63 | .92 |
| 31 | .69 | 1.40 | .61 | .92 |
| 32 | 1.20 | 1.72 | .68 | .91 |
| 33 | .86 | 1.51 | .63 | .92 |

(Table continues)

Table 27 (Continued).

| DISTRESS Item # | <u>M</u> | <u>SD</u> | Corrected item total scale correlation | Cronbach's alpha if item deleted ^a |
|--------------------|----------|-----------|--|---|
| 35 | 1.72 | 1.73 | .64 | .91 |
| 36 | 1.74 | 1.75 | .61 | .92 |
| 41 | .48 | 1.25 | .49 | .92 |

^aOverall item alpha = .92

shelter services is consistent with the process of leaving abusive relationships and evidence of increased harassment within this population support this researcher's framework that leaving the abusive relationship is a time of increased harassment.

Research Question 3

Research Question 3 asks: Does the 45-item pilot HARASS measure and/or a refined version of the HARASS measure fit within the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) (see Appendix A)? Harassment is a mechanism to enact power and control (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) that becomes most evident as women try to leave their abusive relationships. The Pence and Paymar (1986, 1993) categories of power and control seemed to conceptually represent much of the behavioral content of the HARASS and included the abuser behaviors of using intimidation, emotional abuse, coercion and threats, economic abuse, isolation, children, male privilege, and the tactics of minimizing, denying, and blaming.

Confirmatory Factor Analysis of 45-Item Pilot HARASS Measure Items Into Power and Control Model Categories

As discussed in Chapter II, the behaviors on the 45-item pilot HARASS measure were sorted by this researcher and a former director of a battered women's shelter into the eight conceptual categories identified within the Power and Control Model (see Table 5). Mishel (1989) cautions against using factor analysis as a measure of construct validity unless the dimensions of the construct have been well developed. While much has been written about the Power and Control Model, its relationship with the concept of harassment has not been established. However, since this researcher had proposed a theoretical relationship between subgroups of items on the 45-item pilot HARASS with the eight Power and Control Model categories, a confirmatory, varimax rotated factor analysis with eight factors was attempted (Mishel, 1989; Nunnally, 1978).

To test whether items on the 45-item pilot HARASS measure would factor into the eight conceptual categories identified within the Power and Control Model (see Table 5), a factor analysis with principal components extraction to estimate the number of factors was used prior to a principal factors extraction with varimax rotation (Tabachnick & Fidell, 1989, 1996). Initially, 11 factors with Eigen values greater than 1.000 were extracted by the computer. Then using a principal axis factors extraction with varimax rotation (Tabachnick & Fidell, 1989, 1996), the items were forced into eight factors to see if the HARASS scale items would factor in a manner

similar to the eight conceptual categories in the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993). Items 1 through 11 of the 45-item pilot HARASS had Eigen values greater than 1.000. The items were not well defined by this factor solution. The items from the 45-item pilot HARASS scale loaded into seven of the eight factors with no logical or theoretical pattern explaining the factors and the eight categories of the Power and Control Model. A confirmatory, varimax rotated eight-factor analysis was conducted first on the 24-item and then on the 23-item HARASS item set with a similar lack of logical consistency between the item factor loadings and the eight categories of the Power and Control Model. Therefore, a partial answer to Research Question 3 is that there is no statistical fit between the behaviors identified on the 45-item or the 23-item HARASS measure and all eight categories of the Pence and Paymar (1986, 1993) Power and Control Model.

Theoretical Fit of HARASS Items With Power and Control Model

However, as was described in Chapter II, there is a theoretical fit between items on either version of the HARASS and behaviors identified on the Power and Control Model. The write-in section of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure was very popular with a 59% respondent response rate. Eighty-six women (62 from the Campbell study and 24 from the King and Ryan study) wrote in 263 additional items in this section. A detailed analysis of the content of the write-in responses was beyond the scope of this dissertation. However, the responses were reviewed to survey the content themes. Many of the items were reiterations of abuser behaviors captured by

the 45-items or the definition of harassment provided on the cover page. In addition, many of the behavioral examples listed in the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993), such as male privilege, forced sex, and denial of the abuse by the male partner, were contained within the 263 write-in responses.

These findings provide further theoretical support for a conceptual fit between the items on the HARASS and the Power and Control Model. These write-in behaviors addressed physical, verbal, emotional, and sexual abuse. They also addressed male privilege, economic abuse, isolation, coercion, threats and intimidation abuse, all present in the Power and Control Model. In fact, many of the write-in abusive behaviors fit within the Power and Control Model category that was previously untapped by the 45-item pilot HARASS measure, namely, the category that includes minimizing, denying, and blaming.

Chapter Summary

The author's work on a draft measure of harassment resulted in the creation of a 45-item pilot harassment instrument that had preliminary face and content validity. This 45-item pilot HARASS measure was further evaluated in relationship to this study's three research questions. To answer Research Question 1, it was determined that the 45-item pilot HARASS measure had adequate estimates of reliability and validity as measured by Cronbach's alpha reliability coefficients and correlations between the HARASS pilot and the ISA and DA. A series of item reduction procedures was conducted that deleted items for: (a) statistical and conceptual

redundancy, (b) lack of fit within the concept of harassment while leaving abusive relationships sets, and (c) poor item performance. This process helped to answer Research Question 2. The fewest number, 23-item HARASS measure also had adequate estimates of reliability and validity. Finally, to answer Research Question 3, the 45-item pilot HARASS measure and a shortened version of the HARASS measure were examined for their fit within the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993). While a statistical fit was not found, a conceptual fit between the Power and Control Model and the 45-item and 23-item HARASS measures was discussed.

CHAPTER IV

DISCUSSION OF FINDINGS

The purpose of this chapter is to present a discussion of the findings regarding the development of a 45-item pilot measure and a 23-item reduced measure of harassment of abused women in the process of leaving abusive relationships. The present study was conducted within a feminist theoretical model that views the etiology of most intimate partner abuse as stemming from issues of power and control (Parker & Paymar, 1986, 1993). It was supported by qualitative findings from prior course work (Denzin, 1989) and operationalized by a quantitative, psychometric methodology. Most students of the feminist perspective have not relied on positivistic research methodologies. Nevertheless, combining qualitative and quantitative methodologies does not violate any paradigm assumptions (Fordham et al., 1995) and has been incorporated by researchers into multi-method, feminist-based research on the issues of intimate partner abuse (Parker & McFarlane, 1992; Thompson, 1989). This researcher also used a feminist-based design to develop and test a measure.

Design of Present Study

In the present study, the researcher used secondary data to explore and describe student performance within a psychometric descriptive design. Included

and
data
for the
ata sets
ment of

theoretical frameworks (Polit, 1996; Polit & Hungler, 1983). Issues of secondary analysis will be considered in this chapter followed by a discussion about the results of secondary analysis of data on harassment of women leaving abusive males in relationship to the theoretical framework of power and control (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993).

Strengths and Weaknesses of Using Secondary Data

This secondary analysis design was an efficient and economical use of resources and time with expediency being the greatest advantage (Polit, 1996; Polit & Hungler, 1983). An advantage of the present study was the diversity of the two participant groups. Except for expected differences in some variables, such as ethnicity and living with versus away from the abuser, the two samples showed many similarities in demographics. The demographic similarities between these diverse groups supported the generalizability of the reliability and validity estimates among the HARASS scales within Black/African-American and White/Caucasian samples to samples with similar demographics. The Non-White/Non-Black sample was too small for such generalization of findings.

Conducting secondary data analysis on data already collected, however, has several inherent weaknesses (Polit, 1996; Polit & Hungler, 1983), especially when data are collected by different researchers at different sites for different study purposes. One of the largest disadvantages of secondary data analysis is lack of control (Polit, 1996; Polit & Hungler, 1983). In the present secondary analysis study,

this researcher had no control over such things as research purpose, sample selection, designs of the two studies, demographic variables collected, choice of measures used for criterion validity, or training of research assistant data collectors.

Maximizing control is the cornerstone of research design (Polit, 1996; Polit & Hungler, 1983). It is common for the researcher in secondary data analyses to rely heavily on research control procedures designed and implemented by the primary investigators. While procedural and methodological controls support increased confidence in the validity findings (Brink & Wood, 1989), such control in secondary data analysis studies is beyond the influence of the user of secondary data. In the present study, the primary purpose was the psychometric testing of a 45-item measure of harassment developed by this researcher and used by Campbell (1997) and King and Ryan (1997). The data gathered by Campbell as well as King and Ryan was then used in this study.

For psychometric studies, the main concerns about control are scale administration procedures being similar across samples. To address this concern, this researcher trained Campbell (1997) and King and Ryan (1997) in the administration of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure, thus providing some basis for control over tool administration. However, hired research assistants collected some data in both studies, and the training may have been differentially taught to or applied by research assistants. The research assistants in both studies were trained about data collection procedures by the respective principal investigators, but this researcher had no

assurances that this training led to equivalent implementation. These facts suggest uncertainty about procedural errors, a potential source of random error (Nunnally, 1978; Waltz et al., 1991).

As will be discussed in subsequent sections, Campbell's (1997) research purposes differed from those of King and Ryan (1997) and, by design, their samples of abused women were obtained by totally different means. All the women in both samples either scored abused on a screening tool or were assumed to be abused due to their presence in a shelter for abused women.

Sample Description

Participants in this study were 144 women: (a) 93 community-based women from Time 3 of a longitudinal study exploring women's responses to battering (Campbell, 1997), and (b) 51 emergency shelter-based women from a study exploring the health care needs of abused women (King & Ryan, 1997). The community-based sample was from a northern Midwestern urban area while the shelter-based sample was from several medium-sized communities in two mid-Atlantic states. All the women in Campbell's sample at Time 1 of this longitudinal study had scored abused as measured by the CTS (Straus & Gelles, 1986). King and Ryan's (1997) sample were assumed to be abused because they were residents in an emergency shelter for battered women. In general, as supported by the literature about the diversity of women experiencing abuse (Gelles, 1974, 1976; Pagelow, 1981, 1984; Walker, 1979, 1984), there were more similarities than dissimilarities in the demographics of the two

samples. Specifically, the present study mirrored the findings reported in domestic violence literature in that there were few differences among the abused women attributable to such variables as mean age, race, educational level, number of children, cultural, or socioeconomic status.

The data in the present study, not surprisingly, had inconsistencies among data sets, especially in the sample demographics. This contributed to some difficulty in combining data sets. For example, information on income level could not be analyzed or compared, since King & Ryan (1997) did not collect that data. As was discussed in Chapter III, there were few differences in the demographic variables that could be compared.

The samples differed statistically on two demographic variables: (1) ethnicity, and (2) whether living with or not living with the abuser. The community-based sample was over 79% Black/African-American ($n = 72$), while the emergency shelter-based sample was over 71% ($n = 35$) White/Caucasian (see Table 6). While statistically significant, the different racial proportions reflected the racial composition of the respective communities and were expected.

There were no significant differences in marital status. When the researcher sorted the samples according to living with or apart from the abusive intimate male partner, they were significantly different. Almost 35% ($n = 31$) of the community-based women viewed themselves as living with their abusive male partners, while only 1 woman from the emergency shelter-based sample viewed herself as still living

with her abusive partner. Thus, the sheltered-based women were significantly more likely to view themselves as not living with their abusers ($n = 50$ or 98%) compared with community-based women ($n = 57$ or 65%). Clinically, this is a logical finding since women are admitted to emergency shelters because they fit shelter criteria of being in crisis after actual abuse or being in imminent danger of physical, emotional, and/or sexual abuse from their abusers. Women who enter an emergency battered women's shelter are often attempting to break free of the violent relationship (Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995).

Unlike the sample of shelter-based women, the community-based women were neither in crisis nor seeking emergency help because of acute abuse. In fact, it is possible that the women in Campbell's community-based sample had never been beaten as severely as the shelter sample. Campbell's participants were not in crisis; even those women who had been abused and harassed did not report being very distressed as measured by the HARASS DISTRESS scales. Responding to newspaper ads and bulletin board postings, women who had been having serious problems in their relationship for over a year volunteered to participate. Women were screened into Campbell's (1997) study at Time 1 if they scored abused on the CTS (Straus, 1979). Therefore, while identified by the CTS as abused, Campbell's sample was not, necessarily, in acute danger when recruited. They may not have been abused to the same extent as the women in King and Ryan's sample.

In his discussion of differing perspectives on domestic violence, Johnson (1995) described a far more familiar but less serious problem of common couple violence and the much rarer and more serious problem of patriarchal terrorism. In common couple violence, minor violence occurs occasionally (every few months) in response to the stressors of everyday living (Johnson, 1995). Johnson (1995), supporting the findings from national survey data using the CTS (Straus, 1979; Straus & Gelles, 1986; Straus, Gelles, & Steinmetz, 1980), stated that women are as likely as men to perpetrate common couple violence (Steinmetz, 1977-1978; Steinmetz & Lucca, 1988).

Johnson (1995) described patriarchal terrorism as serious, often life-threatening abuse, usually inflicted by males who use a variety of tactics (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) such as actual beatings, threats, isolation, and economic subordination with the overall purpose to control women. Johnson (1995) stated that those are the women who are more likely to use emergency shelters, hospital emergency rooms, and emergency police interventions.

King and Ryan's (1997) entire sample was shelter-based, which likely accounts for the reason why only 1 woman described herself as living with her abuser. When the samples are examined separately, the findings are even more consistent with Johnson's view of women in shelters being subjected to increased patriarchal terrorism. King and Ryan's participants reported approximately twice as much physical abuse (ISA-Physical), nonphysical abuse (ISA-Nonphysical), harassment

frequency (HARASS OFTEN), and harassment distress (HARASS DISTRESS) as did Campbell's participants on both the 45-item pilot HARASS tool and the 23-item reduced HARASS tool (see Tables 7 and 8).

Thirty-one women in Campbell's (1997) study described themselves as still living with their abusive male partners at Time 3. The women in Campbell's study were not as physically or nonphysically abused as the women in King and Ryan's (1997) study. The women in Campbell's sample who were harassed, did not find the harassing behaviors to be as distressing. In addition, by Time 3, Campbell (see Appendix L) stated that she had lost a third of her original sample ($n = 47$) due to safety and transience factors. It is probable that the very women who were in the most danger at Time 1 and Time 2 from Campbell's longitudinal sample were lost to research by Time 3.

The difference in the mean number of months in the relationship between the two samples required closer scrutiny because of a significant lack of homogeneity of variance among samples as measured by Levene's Test for Equality of Variance ($F = 5.93$, $df = 128.13$, $p < .02$). The women in Campbell's community-based sample had been in their relationships 24 months longer than King and Ryan's shelter-based sample of women ($M = 100.00$ and 75.86 months, respectively). The correlation between these two variables was near significance ($p = .07$). This was also the case with current partner status. Approximately one-third of Campbell's original sample was lost to attrition by Time 3. Women at most risk of abuse probably had left their

relationships and, consequently, may have been the women lost to the study.

Therefore, the current partner status of the women remaining in Campbell's study could have skewed the results toward longer relationships. In addition, the women in Campbell's sample were on average about a year older than the women in King and Ryan's sample so opportunities to enter relationships occurred earlier.

The findings that there were no statistical significant differences between mean age, education level, and the number of children between the two samples (see Table 6) are important to this study, supporting the combining of samples in a final analysis. The average age of the women in both samples was about 32.5 years. The mean education level of both samples was almost 13 years, with the women in both samples having an average of two children. This similarity of age, education level, and number of children in both studies supports the literature that states that battered women come from all ages, educational levels, racial, and socioeconomic backgrounds (Gelles, 1974, 1976; Straus et al., 1980; Walker, 1979). Because of the preponderance of similarities and the few expected and explainable differences among the two samples on demographics variables, the evidence affirmed that the samples were demographically congruent and could be combined for psychometric analyzes and revision of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure.

Data Collection Instruments

Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA)

As previously discussed, the ISA (see Appendix C) has been shown to have solid reliability and validity as an abuse assessment tool for physical and nonphysical abuse (Hudson & McIntosh, 1981). Advantages of the ISA include its ease of completion, its brevity, and its availability free of charge to the research community. The ISA's published reliability and validity estimates and effective use in nursing studies made it an excellent measure to use in convergent construct validity with the 45-item pilot HARASS, especially with a population of African-American women. Besides measuring physical and nonphysical abuse, the ISA, when used with a sample of predominantly African-American women, factored into a third subscale (see Table 3) which contained those items indexing more controlling and isolating behaviors (Campbell, Campbell, et al., 1994).

While the nonphysical items of the ISA are not labeled as psychological abuse, they appear to tap that domain. Even though this researcher had no control over measure choices, the ISA is an instrument that would have been considered a priori to fit theoretically for convergent construct validity testing with the HARASS tool. The strength of the positive correlation between the 45-item pilot HARASS and the ISA was expected, theoretically, to be approximately $r = .50$. The actual correlations were higher than $r = .50$ for several subsamples.

In Campbell's sample, the correlations between the 45-item pilot and 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS measures for all cases and abused only were at or below the expected levels with the ISA-Combined, ISA-Physical, and ISA-Nonphysical scales (see Tables 12 and 13, and Tables 21 and 23). These correlations were all significant and positive. Correlating the ISA scales with the 45-item pilot and 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS measures in King and Ryan's sample (1997) or combining both samples on all cases and on the abused cases only produced positive and significant findings that ranged from the middle .50s to the high .60s (see Tables 10, 11, 14 and 15 and Tables 20, 22, 24, and 25). In general, however, both the HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS measures were more strongly correlated with the ISA scales than was expected, and most of these correlations were significant at $p < .001$.

These findings provided post-facto support for the use of the ISA in convergent construct validity testing. None of the correlations was greater than $r = .70$, which suggests that the ISA and HARASS are not redundant tools when used either with battered women from a community-based sample or with an emergency shelter-based sample.

Interestingly, the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales for both the 45-item pilot and the 23-item reduced HARASS measures correlated highest with the ISA-Physical scale (see Tables 10 through 15 and Tables 21 through 25, respectively), which would appear to indicate that the concept of harassment while leaving abusive relationships

taps abuser behaviors that correspond more strongly with physically abusive tactics than nonphysically abusive behaviors. Yet, none of the items on the 45-item pilot HARASS or the 23-item reduced HARASS measures addressed physically abusive behaviors, an interesting theoretical dilemma. Nevertheless, this dilemma is not new. Tolman (1989) encountered it when he created the Psychological Maltreatment of Women Inventory (PMWI). He wanted to focus only on abuser behaviors that were psychological in nature and subsequently had to delete from his draft PMWI scale all nonphysical items that had an implied physical component that included threats of direct physical harm or harm to property to focus on only psychological abuse. The 45-item pilot HARASS measure contains 18 items that directly imply or actually threaten physical harm to people, property, or pets, while the 23-item reduced HARASS measure contains 11 such items. Harassing items that may imply or predict physical abuse through threats to people, property, and/or pets appears to capture these concerns about threatened and/or possible physical abuse. On the other hand, the ISA was not designed for women in the process of leaving abusive relationships and, therefore, may explain some findings. The ISA's published reliability and validity estimates and effective use in nursing studies made it an excellent measure to use in convergent construct validity with the 45-item pilot HARASS. In the present study, the Cronbach's alphas for the ISA among all cases and within all samples supported its internal consistency. The Cronbach's alpha estimates for the ISA-Combined were

all in the .90s, while the ISA-Physical ranged from .82 to .92; the ISA-Nonphysical ranged from .89 to .96.

Danger Assessment (DA)

The DA (Campbell, 1995) is a 15-item tool that uses yes or no responses to mostly abuser-related behaviors associated clinically with domestic homicide (see Appendix D). The reliability and validity of the DA have been supported in several studies (Campbell, 1995; Campbell, Miller, et al., 1994; McFarlane et al., 1992).

The behavior of the 15-item DA in this study was similar to that found in other published studies (Campbell, 1995), following a pattern of small alphas in small samples. In the present study, the Cronbach's alphas for the DA on Campbell's sample, all cases and abused only, were .59 ($n = 33$) and .51 ($n = 23$), respectively at Time 3 (see Table 9). In fact, the Cronbach's alpha estimate on the not abused women ($n = 10$) completing the DA was the lowest estimate ($\alpha = .46$) (see Table 9). These estimates of internal consistency of the DA are lower than the coefficient alphas ranging from .60 ($n = 33$) to .86 ($n = 156$) reported in five previous studies (Campbell, 1995). Scales with many items tested on larger samples tend to elevate estimates of internal consistency (Nunnally, 1978), and the three estimates of internal consistency obtained appear to be related to sample size. Had Campbell (1997) required all the participants at Time 3 ($N = 93$) to complete the DA, the estimates of internal consistency reliability would have been higher.

Estimates of internal consistency are expected to be lower in measures where items have a dichotomous scoring solution and where each item is considered an independent risk factor (Knapp, 1991). These lowered estimates of internal consistency are probably related to the design of the DA and the size of the sample in the present study. The items on the DA were designed with a dichotomous yes or no solution and constitute a list of independent risk markers for homicide (personal communication, Campbell, 1998). The DA is also not a domestic violence screening or assessment scale. It was designed for either self-administration or professional administration with women already identified as abused. All of the items on the DA have been established as correlates of homicide (Campbell, 1995). The DA was designed for women either still involved in ongoing abusive relationships or those who are in the process of leaving abusive relationships.

While the researcher in the present study had no control over the choice of measures, the DA is an instrument that would have been considered a priori to fit theoretically in testing convergent construct validity. The strength of the positive correlation between the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales and the DA was predicted, theoretically, to be approximately $r = .50$; however, the two scales, while displaying positive and significant correlations, did not correlate as strongly as was predicted.

Correlations between the mean scores of the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales, the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales,

and the DA mean total scale scores (see Tables 10 through 15 and Tables 21 through 25, respectively) provided post-facto support for the DA's use in convergent construct validity testing with a measure of harassment of women leaving abusive relationships. None of the correlations was greater than $r = .70$, suggesting that the DA and the HARASS are not redundant measures. Campbell's combined sample of all cases completing the DA ($n = 33$) was significantly and positively correlated near the predicted level of $r = .50$. Correlation coefficients between the DA and the 45-item pilot OFTEN and DISTRESS scales and the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales were $r = .49, .47, .47$ and $.45$, respectively, (see Tables 13 and 21). Campbell's sample of abused women who completed the DA ($n = 23$) correlated positively and significantly with women who completed the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales ($r = .42$ and $.42$, respectively) (see Table 12). While being positive, the correlation on the DA between Campbell's sample of abused women ($n = 23$) and the 23-item HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS scales only neared significance ($r = .40$ and $.38$, respectively) (see Table 23). Correlation coefficients computed on small samples will be nonsignificant compared to same-size coefficients on larger samples (Polit, 1996).

Campbell did not have all women complete the DA (or ISA) at Time 3, only those who believed they were being abused and/or were in danger. It is probable that these design and sampling issues contributed to lowered correlations between the DA total mean score and the 45-item pilot and 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and

DISTRESS mean scores. While the range of scores on the DA was not restricted, the size of correlation coefficients is related to the overall sample size. Larger samples tend to have larger correlation coefficients. The lower than predicted correlations between the DA and the 45-item and 23-item HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS measures may be related to the limits imposed by a small sample ($n = 33$) of community-based women who completed the DA and the 45-item pilot HARASS measure. By design, at Time 3, only 33 women who felt they were in some danger completed the DA.

If the DA had been collected on all of Campbell's (1997) community-based sample and King and Ryan's (1997) shelter-based sample, this researcher believes that a greater range of responses to the DA tool, and consequently higher correlations with the 45-item pilot and 23-item reduced HARASS measures, would have resulted, especially since King and Ryan's (1997) sample also scored higher on the ISA and HARASS tools.

The DA's published reliability and validity estimates and effective use in nursing studies made it an excellent measure to use in examining convergent construct validity with the 45-item pilot and 23-item reduced HARASS tools. Its theoretical fit also with the period of leaving abusive relationships made it a strong choice.

Summary

When the DA tool and the ISA scales were examined among the various samples, all cases and abused cases, the relationships between the DA and the ISA

scales were as expected. With all cases from both samples combined, the DA tool was positively and significantly correlated with the ISA-Combined, ISA-Physical, and ISA-Nonphysical scales (see Table 10). In the combined sample and Campbell's sample of abused cases, the DA scale was not significantly correlated with the ISA; however, the behavior of the tools was as expected, with positive correlations that approached significance ranging from $r = .17$ to $.29$ (see Tables 11 and 12). In Campbell's sample of all cases (see Table 13) the DA tool was positively and significantly correlated with the ISA-Combined and ISA-Physical scales. However, the correlation between the DA tool and the ISA-Nonphysical scale in Campbell's sample of all cases was positive but not significant (see Table 13). These correlations support the similarity in constructs measured by the tools which are clearly not redundant. One possible explanation for the higher correlations between the 45-item pilot HARASS measures and the ISA scales is simply that women in shelters experience greater levels of harassment and that there is a strong conceptual relationship between physical and nonphysical abuse and harassment of sheltered battered women.

Research Question 1

Research Question 1 asked: What is the reliability and validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure. The 45-item pilot HARASS measure (see Appendix K), is a summated, dual-rating, self-report scale created to measure: (a) the frequency of harassing behaviors (OFTEN scale) and, (b) if present, the level of perceived distress

(DISTRESS scale). High Cronbach's reliability coefficient alphas supported the internal consistency reliability of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure (both the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales, .96 and .95, respectively). In fact, the high reliability coefficients suggested that the 45-item pilot HARASS might contain redundant items even for a new tool. The Cronbach's reliability coefficient alphas on the 23-item reduced HARASS measure (OFTEN and DISTRESS scales, .93 and .92, respectively) were more congruent with commonly found internal consistency reliability coefficients. These estimates suggested acceptable redundancy for a new measure. While, Nunnally (1978) suggests that the criterion level for a coefficient alpha for a new or immature measure be at or above .70, DeVellis (1991) advises that for measures in the developmental stage and especially for measures tested on small samples, that one should err toward higher alphas. Content validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure had been supported through the developmental process described in Chapters II and III. Convergent construct validity of the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN measure and the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN measure with the DA and the ISA (Physical, Nonphysical, and Combined) was discussed in Chapter III and summarized in the preceding sections. Even though the 45-item pilot HARASS OFTEN scale was significantly and positively correlated with the DA and the ISA (Physical, Nonphysical, and Combined), item reduction steps were initiated because shorter scales are more easily answered by respondents and the 45-item HARASS pilot scale's high reliability coefficients suggested probable item redundancy.

HARASS, as an internally consistent measure, was conceptually, clinically, and substantively different from the DA tool. The HARASS tool indexed abusive behaviors occurring during a woman's process of leaving, while the DA measure indexed independent risk markers for increased dangerousness within abusive relationships. The non-redundant, positive and mostly significant correlations between first, the 45-item pilot and then, the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS measures with the DA tool, indicate two separate concepts. The non-redundant, but higher significant and positive correlations between the 45-item pilot and also the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS measures and the ISA-Combined, ISA-Physical, and ISA-Nonphysical scales suggest that both the 45-item and 23-item measures of harassment index the abusiveness of male partner's behaviors. Yet, both these HARASS tools capture aspects of male abuser behavior that are found clinically only when the woman tries to leave. Thus it appears that a new reliable and valid tool has been developed to index male harassment behaviors and can be used in further research and practice with women who are leaving abusive relationships.

Research Question 2

Research Question 2 asked: What is the fewest number of items that supports the reliability and validity of the HARASS measure? The 45-item pilot HARASS measure was reduced to a 23-item measure (see Table 19) through a systematic process of item deletion (see Table 18) that included removing items: (a) that were

statistically redundant, (b) that performed poorly, (c) that were not unique to harassment in the process of leaving abusive relationships, and (d) that were conceptually redundant. Statistically redundant items usually will have inter-item correlations above .70 and should be examined for possible deletion according to Mishel (1989). While retaining items with inter-item correlation scores that average between .30 and .70 has been recommended (Mishel, 1989), items with correlations above .70 can be retained if those items capture a domain not tapped by other items (Waltz et al., 1991).

While the 23-item reduced HARASS measure has solid estimates of internal consistency reliability and convergent construct validity, not all of the items were internally homogeneous. For example, two items performed poorly on the 23-item reduced HARASS OFTEN scale (see Table 19): Item 4 (threatens to harm our pet) and Item 41 (reports me to the authorities for taking drugs when I don't). Both had low item means ($M = .54$ and $.30$, respectively) and low evidence of homogeneity as estimated by low corrected item scale total correlations ($r = .35$ and $.47$, respectively). Item 4 was kept largely because it presents a dimension of harassment not captured by any other item and because multiple references in the domestic homicide literature support its link to increased dangerousness (Ascione, 1998; Walker, 1979). Item 41 was also kept primarily because the item represented a dimension of abuser behavior not captured by other items, and secondarily, to support estimates of construct validity in correlations with the DA tool.

In Chapter III, the discussion of 12 items identified as conceptually redundant within four sets of abuser behaviors on the 45-item pilot HARASS measure demonstrated the item reduction process. Most of the items in those sets, as discussed earlier (Chapter III), were thought a priori to be statistically redundant. On the 23-item reduced set HARASS measure, one item from each of the four sets was retained for psychometric scoring primarily based on a review of corrected item-total mean correlations, measures of homogeneity, the contribution of each to convergent construct validity, and whether it tapped a domain of harassment not covered by another item. For example, in the first set (see Table 18), Item 8 (threatens to have the kids taken away from me) was retained and Item 17 (threatens to snatch the kids if I leave him) was deleted. In the second set, Item 21 (frightens my family) was retained and Item 34 (frightens my friends) was deleted. In the third set, Item 11 (destroys my property) was retained, while Item 10 (messes with my car), Item 20 (takes my property), and Item 44 (sold things I own without my consent) were deleted. In the fourth set, Item 30 (sends me threatening messages) was retained, while Item 23 (uses his friends or family to send me threatening messages), Item 24 (leaves notes on my car), and Item 43 (leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine) were all deleted. Further investigation of psychometric performance of the 23-item reduced HARASS measure is needed and will be discussed in more detail in Chapter V.

Research Question 3

Research Question 3 asked if the 45-item pilot HARASS measure and/or a refined version of the HARASS measure fit within the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993). Confirmatory, principal axis extraction factor analysis with varimax rotation on a forced eight-factor solution was conducted on both the 45-item pilot HARASS measure and then the 23-item reduced HARASS tool. Neither exercise resulted in factor loadings that conceptually reflected the categories of the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993). Neither did the items load on factors that fit a preliminary sort of the 45-item pilot HARASS tool by this researcher and another domestic violence expert.

Looking for eight possible factors in a 23-item measure is statistically unrealistic. Nunnally (1978) states that three items loading on each factor is viewed as a minimum. Given that guideline, a 23-item tool has too few items, and the user of the factor analysis would have to assume that the items would be distributed evenly on loadings across eight factors.

Another possible explanation for the lack of statistical support for the hypothesized relationship of HARASS items to Power and Control Model categories is that the eight categories of the Power and Control Model are not mutually exclusive. For example, there is considerable overlap between the model's categories of using coercion, threats, and intimidation. In addition, the categories of using emotional abuse and minimizing, denying, and blaming also have significant conceptual overlap.

The best use of the Power and Control Model may be to understand ongoing abuse rather than the period of leaving (Fishwick, 1993; Landenburger, 1989, 1993; Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995; Ulrich, 1991, 1993) when harassing behaviors are designed to recapture the woman (Boulette & Andersen, 1985). The later may be supported by a three-factor solution identified on the 23-item reduced HARASS measure during a factor analysis to discover outlier items. The three-factor solution sorted items into conceptually meaningful factors of stalking, threats, and abuser behaviors that treat children, property, and sex as commodities (see Table 17). Stalking-like behaviors are extremely common during the process of leaving, especially during the first year out of the relationship (Wilson & Daley, 1993). The use of threats, especially as an active recapture tactic, have been discussed in the literature (Boulette & Andersen, 1985; Wilson & Daley, 1993). Others have described the link between abused women leaving and manipulation of the children, destruction of property, and forced sex (Browne, 1987; Campbell, 1995; Ewing, 1987; Kuhl, 1986; Russell, 1982; Walker, 1989). In summary, only part of the Power and Control Model is supported by the three-factor solution of the HARASS measure. Whether the other Power and Control Model categories would be represented in the qualitative write-in HARASS items is an issue for further study.

Using a Planned Series of Studies for Psychometric Purposes

The secondary data analysis design of this study was focused primarily on evaluating the reliability and validity of a measure of harassment of women in the

process of leaving abusive intimate relationships. Throughout the present study, the HARASS tool was described as a pilot instrument. Pretesting instruments in pilot studies is an excellent way to evaluate reliability, validity, tool length, completion time, item wording, participant instructions, and to find defects in methodology (Lackey & Wingate, 1989). It is common that the methodological and/or instrumentation changes that result from one pilot study will lead the researcher to test the changes in a second pilot study (Lackey & Wingate, 1989). However, the major question that should be addressed in the present study, one every pilot study asks, is “Do the findings of the pilot study warrant a full research study.” This question will be answered presently.

Pretesting the 45-item Pilot HARASS Measure

As discussed in Chapter III, the process of pretesting the 45-item pilot HARASS measure answered Research Questions 1 and 2 by supporting its reliability and convergent construct validity. It also supported the reliability and convergent construct validity of the 23-item reduced HARASS measure. Further, pretesting the 45-item pilot HARASS measure confirmed that it took approximately 15 minutes to complete the tool. Therefore, a 23-item reduced HARASS measure should take approximately half that time to complete, thus reducing participant fatigue.

Additionally, the pretest allowed the researcher to see how items behaved in use and how the instructions and format affected responses. Pretesting the 45-item pilot HARASS measure allowed participants to highlight an instrument design

problem. For example, the omission of “Not Applicable” as a scoring option on the OFTEN and DISTRESS scales led subjects to edit the pilot tool by writing in “Not Applicable.” Pretesting the 45-item pilot HARASS measure identified three distinct items that specifically tap abuser behaviors in response to a woman leaving and staying away (see Appendix K, Items 12, 17, and 25). However, the original wording on these three items was not parallel and required revision.

Development of a 23-Item Redesigned HARASS Measure

Based on the pilot testing first of the 45-item HARASS measure and then the 23-item reduced set, the researcher realized that the HARASS measure (see Appendix R) needed to be redesigned, requiring several changes discussed in the previous sections. The first change was in the language of instructions. On the cover page of the 23-item redesigned HARASS tool, the reference to the measure being a student project was deleted. Additionally, the new cover page informed participants that the measure would take about 10 minutes to complete. The definition of harassment on the cover of the 23-item redesigned HARASS measure was also changed. From doctoral course work, qualitative data collected from abused women in the process of leaving had advocated refinement of the definition of harassment. The refined definition included the abuser’s intent to wear down the woman emotionally and to coerce her while she tries to make choices about leaving the abusive relationship. The redefined definition reads as follows:

Harassment is a persistent pattern of behavior by a male intimate partner intended to bother, annoy, trap, emotionally wear down, threaten, frighten, terrify and/or coerce a woman with the overall intent to control her choices and behavior about leaving the relationship.

Results of the retesting had suggested that 7 items on the 23-item reduced HARASS measure could be reworded for a 23-item redesigned HARASS measure. Three items that addressed threats to children and threats of homicide/suicide if the woman left or stayed away from the abusive relationship were reworded for parsimony and to support parallel syntax in their construction (see Appendix R):

1. Threatens to kill me if I leave or stay away from him (redesigned HARASS Item # 4);
2. Threatens to harm the kids if I leave or stay away from him (redesigned HARASS Item # 5); and
3. Threatens to kill himself if I leave or stay away from him (redesigned HARASS Item # 16) .

Eight abuser behavior items were deleted from the 45-item pilot HARASS despite their performing well statistically and having theoretical and clinical support while women try to leave abusive relationships. They were found to be conceptually redundant and unnecessary. Therefore, in the 23-item redesigned HARASS measure, the behaviors were blended into four reworded items that conceptually captured each of these four sets of abuser behaviors more thoroughly.

First, two items from the 45-item pilot HARASS tool that measured the abuser's threats to take or snatch the children were combined and reworded into one item: Threatens to snatch or have the kids taken away from me (redesigned HARASS Item # 18). Second, two items from the 45-item pilot HARASS tool that measured abuser behaviors that frighten family and friends were combined and reworded into one item: Frightens people close to me (redesigned HARASS Item # 1). Third, four abuser behaviors, described by women in the process of leaving, that result in damage and/or destruction of possessions were combined and reworded into one item: Messes with my property (for example, sells my stuff, breaks my furniture, damages my car, steals my things (redesigned HARASS Item # 13). Finally, four abuser behavior items that communicated threats to women in the process of leaving abusive relationships were combined and reworded into one item: Leaves me threatening messages (for example: puts scary notes on my car, sends me threatening letters, sends me threats through family and friends, leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine (redesigned HARASS Item # 20).

Care was taken in rewording the above items to avoid double-barreled content, item content that conveys two or more ideas. Double-barreled items can confuse the respondent who may agree with one idea yet disagree with the other (DeVellis, 1991). While the length of these redesigned items increased, the new items maximized sampling redundancy of concepts (DeVellis, 1991) and explained more of the varied domains (Nunnally, 1978) of harassment while providing overall parsimony. Although

long items should usually be avoided in measures, the importance of tapping the redundancy of content and the domain of the construct (Nunnally, 1978) are often important and necessary assets for internal consistency reliability and subsequent validity (DeVellis, 1991). The HARASS measure is an immature tool that taps male abuser behaviors toward women in the process of leaving. Before the results of the present study can be generalized, the efficacy of the redesigned HARASS measure needs to be explored through replication at multiple sites with multiple samples of abused women.

Chapter Summary

In this chapter, the sample was described and compared to the literature. Issues of secondary analysis were discussed as they related to scale testing. The testing of the 45-item pilot and 23-item reduced HARASS measures were discussed in relation to psychometric testing issues. The results of the psychometric testing and examination of respondent's answers led the researcher to create a 23-item redesigned HARASS measure that may have improved the way the measure of harassment indexes harassing behaviors. The redesigned 23-item HARASS measure appears to more parsimoniously index the harassing behavior concepts identified in the pilot testing of a 45-item pilot HARASS measure. However, the 23-item redesigned HARASS measure is untested. No claims about its reliability and validity can be made at this time; nevertheless, the pretesting of the 45-item pilot HARASS and the 23-item reduced HARASS measure strongly suggest that there may be support for reliability

and validity and that further pilot testing and comparison of both 23-item HARASS measures is warranted. Recommendations for this testing and comparison will be discussed in the next chapter.

CHAPTER V
IMPLICATIONS FOR RESEARCH, PRACTICE, AND FURTHER TESTING
OF THE 23-ITEM HARASS MEASURES

The link between women leaving abusive relationships, increased harassment, and increased risk of homicide have been well established in the literature (Browne, 1987; Campbell, 1992; Wilson & Daley, 1993). The further use, testing, and refinement of the 23-item HARASS measures of harassment of women in the process of leaving abusive relationships can increase the understanding of domestic abuse. In addition, based on this researcher's clinical practice experiences, there is an immediate need for a clinically effective measure of harassment that can be used by the domestic violence service community, especially one that has a stalking component. The purpose of this chapter is to discuss the implications for research, clinical practice, and further refinement of a HARASS measure.

Future Psychometric Testing

Follow-up Pilot Testing of the 23-Item HARASS

While the 23-item reduced HARASS tool (see Table 19) has preliminary evidence of reliability and validity when the smaller set of items is extracted from the larger data set and re-analyzed, this measure has not been presented to women in its shortened form. A well-known psychometric concern is the effect one part of a scale

has on responses to other parts of the scale. Reducing the 45-item HARASS to 23 items may influence responses on other items in a different way.

One of the most immediate needs in the development of the HARASS is further psychometric testing of the 23-item reduced HARASS measure, and, ideally, simultaneous testing of the 23-item redesigned HARASS measure (see Appendix R) introduced at the end of Chapter IV. The 23-item redesigned HARASS measure incorporates changes in the wording (not conceptual content) of six items from the 23-item reduced HARASS measure to correct syntax and incorporate suggestions from the study findings. It is this researcher's expert clinical opinion that the 23-item redesigned measure would be more parsimonious, and at the same time more clinically inclusive, of important harassing behavior items removed from the 45-item pilot HARASS measure than the 23-item reduced HARASS tool.

There are several ways to conduct this testing. First, the 23-item reduced HARASS could be expanded to include the six redesigned questions. Items on this 29-item trial HARASS would be sequenced in a way to keep the similar questions away from each other. This 29-item trial HARASS could be tested on a small sample of women known to be battered. Each 23-item scale could be compared with the other as could the old and new replacement items using dependent t tests. For example, estimates of internal consistency reliability would be calculated by Cronbach's alphas on each 23-item measure (the reduced item version and the redesigned item measure). The 23-item reduced measure would be correlated with the 23-item redesigned

23-item redesigned measure to estimate redundancy which would be expected. Item performance (mean, corrected item total, and inter-item correlations) on each scale would be calculated to determine if the redesigned items performed better than the original items on the 23-item reduced measure. In addition, t tests for dependent means would be calculated between the two 23-item measures. Tools such as the Index of Spouse Abuse (ISA) (McIntosh & Hudson, 1981) and the Danger Assessment (DA) (Campbell, 1995) could be co-administered with the 29-item pilot HARASS to explore convergent criterion validity and construct validity.

Next, both 23-item HARASS measures could be sent to domestic violence content experts to obtain estimates of clarity and conceptual fit (Imle & Atwood, 1988; Mishel, 1989). The experts would also be asked to identify any items that were double-barreled and/or confusing.

Another strategy could be used to compare the two shorter measures. Instead of combining the redesigned items into one tool, a follow-up pilot study that would include a randomized assignment of the two 23-item HARASS measures to a convenience sample of 60 women known to be battered (thirty per measure), would help clarify which tool appears to work better by using t tests for independent groups. In this design, women would also complete other measures to explore convergent construct validity. Other statistical tests would include estimates of internal consistency reliability, item analysis, inter-item correlations, and correlations among the total scores on the DA and ISA with mean HARASS OFTEN and DISTRESS

scores. Item performance would be examined for the redesigned items. Scores on old items could be compared to scores on new items using a t test between the two samples. Using these data, the decision could be made about which measure was best. The HARASS measure with the best evidence of reliability and validity, would then be made available for further research and clinical application.

Once the best performing 23-item HARASS measure is established, it will need further psychometric testing to provide evidence of reliability and validity with diverse samples. Some examples of research studies that would examine reliability and validity follow.

Reliability

Every time the 23-item reduced or redesigned HARASS measure is used in any research study, Cronbach's reliability coefficient alphas should be calculated. Although Cronbach's alphas are the most frequently used and understood estimate of internal consistency reliability, they are not the sole estimate available to researchers. Reliability could be explored in a time series design study conducted to assess the frequency and distress level of harassing behaviors as well as their stability during the first year out of an abusive relationship. The construct of harassment, theoretically, can be viewed as being relatively stable over time. Harassment of abused women has been described in the literature as occurring for years, but especially during the first year after she leaves (Campbell, 1992; Browne, 1987; Ewing, 1987; Kuhl, 1986; Wilson & Daley, 1993). There are two clinical explanations why harassment appears

the worst during the first year that a woman is out of the relationship. First, women have shared with this researcher that the level of harassment stays high for a period of time then decreases when the abuser enters a subsequent ongoing intimate relationship. Second, women have shared with this researcher that during the first year apart they learn many ways to avoid the former abusive partner. However, issues involving custody, visitation, and care of their children have resulted in opportunities for continued harassment. In either case, harassment does appear to continue for a measurable time period. Estimates of HARASS stability could be obtained from such a study.

Further reliability could be estimated using a test-retest methodology (Brink & Wood, 1989; DeVellis, 1991; Nunnally, 1978; Waltz et al., 1991) as well as exploring the level of harassment occurring during the early stages of leaving or before leaving abusive situations. A known standard for length of time that abused women can stay in domestic violence emergency shelters is approximately one month. In a future study, for example, women in an emergency shelter setting could complete the 23-item HARASS measure on intake, then re-complete the measure either 2 weeks later or again at discharge (especially if she leaves before the maximum allowable days). The estimate of test-retest reliability could be calculated with a Pearson product-moment correlation (Brink & Wood, 1989).

Test-retest reliability could also be assessed in a hospital-based design. Women could participate in a study that would include the administration of the

HARASS measure in acute care settings after they are treated for injuries from abusive episodes. The retests could be completed at follow-up visits. Because of the high possibility that battered women may not keep their follow-up appointments, the retests could be conducted either during scheduled home visits or by telephone. Home visits would be the ideal, because nurses are more likely to make home health visits than social service providers. During the home health visits, the HARASS measure could be retested as well, providing another opportunity for nursing intervention around abuse and safety issues with the abused women. Some change in the retest values would be expected because of the initial and follow-up interventions. If home health visits cannot be part of the retest design, telephone follow-up would be another practical way to complete the retest. In another design, women recruited in emergency domestic violence shelters could be followed longitudinally for a year. This design, with periodic re-assessments of harassment, could explore the degree that harassment varies during the first year out of an abusive relationship.

In every design, issues for the abused women would need to be explored. Because battered women are a vulnerable, high-risk population, the design would have to address safety issues for the initial contact and any re-contact with the women. The Nursing Research Consortium on Violence and Abuse has published basic safety guidelines for conducting safety-focused research with battered women (Parker, Ulrich, et. al., 1990).

Validity

Estimates on the validity of a 23-item HARASS measure could be explored using a design nearly identical to that of the present study. The 23-item HARASS measure could be administered in community-based and emergency shelter settings to known groups of battered women who also complete measures such as the ISA and DA to estimate convergent construct validity. However, unlike the present study, it is strongly advised that the DA be collected on *both* samples. The present design could also be replicated with construct validity measures other than the ISA, such as the Measure of Wife Abuse (MWA) (Rodenburg & Fantuzzo, 1993).

The 60-item Measure of Wife Abuse (MWA) (Rodenburg & Fantuzzo, 1993) (see Appendix J) had been designed to measure the type, frequency, and severity of abuse within couples. The HARASS measure could be correlated with each of the four 15-item subscales of the MWA: physical abuse, sexual abuse, psychological abuse, and verbal abuse. Conceptually, these items were developed from abuser behaviors inflicted on women actively in the process of leaving abusive relationships or during the previous six months of the relationships. By design, the MWA appears to index a time period more similar to that of the HARASS measure than that of the ISA.

Construct validity could be further estimated using a discriminant groups approach. For example, the 23-item HARASS tool could be administered to a known sample of abused women in the process of leaving abusive relationships and to a group of battered women who are not in the process of leaving. Or the HARASS tool

could be contrasted between a sample of known battered women who have been out of abusive relationships for over a year and women just leaving abusive relationships. In another discriminant group approach, nonabused women could be contrasted with abused women leaving relationships. Theoretically, the scores on the HARASS measure for these samples should be significantly different.

With larger samples, factor loadings on the 23-item reduced or the redesigned HARASS would be recalculated to explore the stability of the preliminary three-factor solution identified in this dissertation (see Table 17) and to help determine whether the HARASS measure should have scored subscales. This factor analysis would be confirmatory in nature because of the preliminary support of a three-factor solution in this HARASS item-reduction study. Cronbach's alphas would be calculated on any identified factors as measures of internal consistency.

Content validity to date has been primarily from domestic violence experts. Content validity could be further explored by examining the 263 written-in comments made by 86 battered women at the end of the 45-item pilot HARASS tool from Campbell's (1997) and King and Ryan's (1997) study participants. Many of the written-in items were reiterations of abuser behaviors indexed by the pilot items or the definition of harassment provided on the cover page. In addition, many of the behavioral examples listed in the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993), such as male privilege, forced sex, and denial of the abuse by the male partner, were also indexed within the 263 write-in responses.

Reading Level of Future HARASS Measures

While women in the pilot study did not raise issues about the readability of the 45-item pilot HARASS measure, the writing style of the 23-item HARASS tool should be evaluated with computer software programs such as GRAMMATIK that is included in WordPerfect® for Windows™ as well as a reading-level software program. A more informal writing style, versus a strict or technical style, might improve the readability of the measure for non-academic persons (Simpson, 1995).

Self-Report Versus Administered Tool

While the HARASS measure was designed, and appeared to perform well, as a self-report tool, there is some agreement in the domestic violence literature (McFarlane, Christoffel, Bateman, Miller, & Bullock, 1991) that self-report measures are not as effective as professional administration of an abuse assessment screen.

While the HARASS tool was designed as a self-report measure, its efficacy as such compared to professional administration has yet to be tested. Future testing of the HARASS measures could include a study that explores self-report and professional administration with subjects randomly assigned to either a self-administered or a professionally administered group.

Controlling for Social Desirability

Issues of social desirability were not directly addressed in the development of the 45-item pilot HARASS or in its reduction and refinement to a 23-item measures. In at least one future study, the 23-item reduced and/or redesigned HARASS

measure(s) should be administered along with a measure of social desirability such as the Marlowe-Crowne Social Desirability Short Form (Crowne & Marlowe, 1960; Strahan & Gerbasi, 1972). Women's responses on other abuse questionnaires have not been associated with social desirability (Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Tolman, 1989), whereas men's responses on abuse measures have been fraught with socially desirable responses (Adams, Towns, & Gavey, 1995; Dutton & Hemphill, 1992; Tolman, 1989). Because of this finding, numerous studies have asked women about abuse by their male intimates (Dutton & Starzomski, 1993; Gondolf, 1988; Tolman, 1989). Therefore, while there is ample precedent to have designed HARASS as a measure that asks women about abuse by male intimates, co-administering a measure of social desirability could further support its design and strengthen the validity of the HARASS scale. Evidence of significant social desirability with the entire HARASS measure by women would raise serious questions about its continued use in research. If only certain items, or certain types of items, were producing socially desirable responses, further revision of the tool would be warranted.

Nursing Samples

An obvious site for recruiting abused women to participate in further testing of the HARASS measure would be in emergency department (ED) settings. Women who use ED services after being abused are more likely to be experiencing severe abuse and domestic terrorism and more likely to use emergency shelters (Johnson, 1995). The present study of two secondary samples supports that sheltered abused women are

significantly more harassed than community-based women and find the harassment significantly more distressing. Battered women who seek acute health care services for abuse-related health problems in outpatient family practice, internal medicine, women's health, and/or obstetric-gynecologic settings would also be possible sources for sampling. Nurses have been involved in child abuse and sexual assault clinical research. A known overlap exists between child abuse and women abuse (Campbell, 1993). The mothers of abused children could be part of a study of harassment, especially if the mother is trying to leave the abusive intimate relationship. Abused women also experience much sexual abuse (Campbell, 1989b) from their present and/or former intimate partners (Campbell, 1989b). Women seeking forensic sexual assault exams could also be a sample.

Routine screening for domestic violence in all health care settings has now been recommended as the norm (American Medical Association, 1992). However, what happens after the clinician assesses that the woman is in an abusive relationship? Often the Abuse Assessment Screen (AAS) (Helton, 1986) or some version of the AAS is used for routine screening in clinical settings. Found to be as effective at screening for abuse as the CTS and ISA (McFarlane, Parker, Soeken, & Bullock, 1992), the AAS might screen potential participants who then could be asked to answer the HARASS and DA to assess their safety. After every positive abuse assessment, the next logical clinical step would be to administer the HARASS tool coupled with the

administration of the DA measure with the DA calendar. For research purposes, other measures of abuse could be added.

Clinical Implications for a Measure of HARASS

When used clinically, the HARASS measure may help the provider and the abused woman better quantify the level and type of harassment in the abusive relationship as she leaves her abuser. In addition, the completion of the DA may also give the provider and the woman clearer risk markers for domestic homicide. The HARASS measure and the DA, while theoretically related, are separate measures, one of homicide risk and the other identifying patterns of abuser behaviors as women leave relationships. Both measures take only minutes to complete, yet can provide much data on the types of abuser behaviors present and woman's risk of danger. After scoring these tools, the clinician can counsel the abused woman to not minimize the violence, addressing the seriousness and dangerousness of her relationship. How a woman scores on individual items on the HARASS and DA may personalize the safety planning the clinician develops with the woman. For example, if the abuser has a history of being violent outside the home, owns a gun (from the DA), and is harassing the woman by bothering her at work (from HARASS), the clinician may be able to help the woman enlist the support and safety planning of her employer to better protect the woman and her co-workers.

Using HARASS Outside of Nursing

The HARASS has clinical (and research) applicability in many settings outside of traditional nursing and health services settings. For example, harassment of battered women is a major concern within the legal system, yet there have been no tools developed within those systems to quantify the escalating pattern of behavior of the abuser who seeks to recapture the woman. The HARASS measure could be used, for example, in family court mediation situations; child custody and especially child visitation exchange situations; as part of the restraining/protective order process; for justification for bail enhancement; to support more long-term “no contact” court orders; and/or for evaluation for possible parole violations. Though untested as such, use of the HARASS measure with the batterers, to test for truthful reporting and awareness of their abusive harassing behaviors, might be explored. Batterers who are amenable to treatment/behavior modification could complete the 23-item reduced or redesigned HARASS tool, and their responses could be compared to how their abused partners completed the measure. This could be done at the beginning of the abuser intervention program, at its completion, and a year after completion, especially if the couple is still in an intimate relationship and/or still has contact with one another.

In social service and therapy settings, the 23-item reduced or redesigned HARASS measure could be used in individual and/or group sessions to focus the content of the session on the woman’s understanding of the abuser’s escalating abusive behaviors, possible harassment, and increased dangerousness. The 45-item

pilot HARASS is already being used effectively in several residential and nonresidential domestic violence support groups in Portland, Oregon, and Chicago to provide focus for discussion. The women in the groups complete the HARASS tool at the onset of the session. Then the facilitators focus the group's discussion on coping with harassment. In general, these coping strategies include discussions around safety planning for the women and their children.

Nursing Theory

In the present study, one sample of participants included women who were experiencing acute battering and had entered an emergency battered women's shelter. Nurses have developed several related and overlapping conceptual models to describe the process of leaving abusers. For example, when women are attempting to break free of the violent relationship (Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995), they go through a process of recovering from the abuse (Landenburger, 1989, 1993). As women negotiate this process of leaving, they regain their personal integrity (Fishwick, 1993) and self-concept (Ulrich, 1991, 1993) and, as a result, can successfully terminate from the abusive relationship with a heightened sense of autonomy (May, 1990). These conceptual models are the building blocks of nursing theory.

In the present study, quantitative data were supported by qualitative data (see Appendix S) from doctoral course work on the harassment of abused women in the process of leaving abusive relationships within a feminist Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993), a model that has logical consistency within the related

constructs of dangerousness and domestic homicide. It could be argued that the Power and Control Model (Pence & Paymar, 1986, 1993) is a conceptual model or a grand theory that broadly describes the phenomena of abuse of women by male intimates. Efforts to explain parts of this phenomena require more specificity, and thus are best described as theory or theory-generating.

While the Power and Control Model has been borrowed from a multi-disciplinary, feminist theory, it fits nicely within the nursing perspective and can be used for further nursing research to generate and test theory. For example, in the present study the researcher has attempted to describe and quantify the process of harassment of abused women while in the process of leaving abusive relationships. This could be described as explanatory theory work (Chinn & Jacobs, 1987; Fawcett, 1984). The ongoing work with the DA within the context of domestic homicide could be viewed as developing predictive theory (Chinn & Jacobs, 1987; Fawcett, 1984).

The process of leaving abusive relationships could be viewed as a middle-range theory. However, the work of nurses who have described more narrow and limited pieces of the process of leaving (Fishwick, 1993; Landenburger, 1989, 1993; Merritt-Gray & Wuest, 1995; Ulrich, 1991, 1993) is best viewed as different conceptual or substantive models (Chinn & Jacobs, 1987; Fawcett, 1984). Developing a measure of harassment of abused women in the process of leaving relationships with battering males in the present study encompasses quantification and testing of middle-range theory.

Expanding Nursing Research to Others in Abusive Intimate Relationships

In addition to recommendations for future research already mentioned in this chapter, the HARASS tool could be tested with lesbian abuse survivors and/or battered men by changing the pronouns within items on the HARASS measure and by changing the gender references on the cover page (see Appendix T). Many shelter programs in larger communities conduct special support groups for abused lesbians and, based on this author's clinical experiences, support groups for abused men are often conducted within agencies that conduct batterer treatment groups. This growing recognition that domestic abuse is not limited to male-female relationships makes social and health service providers more aware that gay men, as well as lesbian women (Lobel, 1986), may be abused by their domestic partners.

Harassment in the Work Place

Violence or the potential for it in the workplace is a topic of increased importance to employers and employee assistance programs and as such should raise important clinical research issues for occupational nurses. Two items from the 45-item pilot HARASS (Item 7, bothers me at work, and Item 9, tries getting me fired) were retained, in part in the 23-item reduced HARASS measure because they tapped issues of harassment of abused women at the workplace. The issues of abuse and harassment being carried over from domestic to occupational settings raises issues about active case finding by occupational nurses and the role of the employer in establishing policies and plans for protection of abused persons and co-workers.

Chapter Summary

The 23-item reduced HARASS measure needs purposeful testing. One of the first studies that needs to be conducted post-doctorally is a comparison of the psychometric performances of the 23-item reduced HARASS measure with the 23-item redesigned HARASS measure. The results of this pilot work will determine which version of HARASS should be used in future studies. As with all tools (new and old), the reliability and validity of HARASS will be examined with every use. Using the HARASS measure with the DA and other tools such as the ISA and the MWA will further support the estimates of convergent construct validity. Discriminant validity by contrasting groups and/or measures within groups should be considered. Nurse researchers have developed, conducted, and published some of the best theoretical studies of battered women in the process of leaving abusive relationships. Using the HARASS measure within these studies will enhance the profession's theoretical and clinical knowledge of the phenomenon of harassment while abused persons are in the process of leaving their domestic abusive relationships.

Dissertation Summary

This dissertation study described the author's process of developing and testing a measure of harassment of abused women who were in the process of leaving their abusive male partners. The conceptual underpinnings for indexing abusive male behaviors and existing measures of abuse were explored and described from the literature, while the concept of harassment was specified and discriminated from abuse

in general. A pilot measure of harassment was developed and tested with two samples. The data from these two samples were used and combined by this researcher as secondary data sources to do psychometric testing on the measure of harassment. From this psychometric evaluation, this researcher was able to reduce the number of items in the measure and estimate internal consistency reliability of both the original pilot tool and the shorter version. Evidence supporting construct validity was gathered. Finally, plans for clinical application as well as for further testing and modification of HARASS were proposed.

REFERENCES

- Ascione, F. R. (1998). Battered women's reports of their partners' and their children's cruelty to animals. *Journal of Emotional Abuse, 1*(1), 119-133.
- Adams, P. J., Towns, A., & Gavey, N. (1995). Dominance and entitlement: The rhetoric men use to discuss their violence towards women. *Discourse & Society, 6*(3), 387-406.
- American Medical Association (1992). *Diagnostic and treatment guidelines on domestic violence*. Chicago, IL: American Medical Association
- Andersen, P. A., Eloy, S. V., Guerrero, L. K., & Spitzberg, B. H. (1995, Summer). Romantic jealousy and relational satisfaction: A look at the impact of jealousy experience and expression. *Communication Reports, 8*(2), 77-85.
- Attala, J. M., Hudson, W. W., McSweeney, M. (1994). A partial validation of two short-form partner abuse scales. *Women & Health, 21*(2/3), 125-139.
- Attala, J. M., Oetker, D., & McSweeney, M. (1995). Partner abuse against female nursing students. *Journal of Psychosocial Nursing, 33*(1), 17-24.
- Barnett, O. W., Martinez, T. E., & Bluestein, B. W. (1995, December). Jealousy and romantic attachment in maritally violent and non-violent men. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence, 10*(4), 473-486.
- Bennett, L. W., Tolman, R. M., Rogalski, C. J. & Srinivasaraghavan, J. (1994). Domestic abuse by male alcohol and drug addicts. *Violence and Victims, 9*(4), 359-368.
- Berk, R. A., Berk, S. F., Loseke, D. R. & Rauma, D. (1983). Mutual combat and other family violence myths. In R. J. Gelles, G. T. Hotaling, & M. A. Straus (Eds.), *The dark side of families: Current family violence research*. Beverly Hills, CA: Sage.
- Biderman, A. D. (1964). Captivity lore and behavior in captivity. In G. H. Grosser, H. Wechsler, & M. Greenblat (Eds.). *The threat of impending disaster*. Cambridge, MA: MIT Press.

- Black's Law Dictionary*, Fifth Ed. (1981). St. Paul, MN: West Publishing.
- Boulette, T. R. & Andersen, S, M. (1985, Summer). "Mind control" and the battering of women. *Community Mental Health Journal*, 21(2), 109-117.
- Brink, P. J. & Wood, M. J. (Eds.). (1989). *Advanced design in nursing research*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.
- Browne, A. (1986). Assault and homicide at home: When battered women kill. In M. J. Saks & L. Saxe (Eds.), *Advances in Applied Social Psychology*, Vol. 3. Hillsdale, NJ: Lawrence Erlbaum Associates, Inc.
- Browne, A. (1987). *When Battered Women Kill*. New York: The Free Press.
- Browning, J. J. & Dutton, D. G. (1986). Assessment of wife assault with the Conflict Tactics Scale: Using couple data to quantify the differential reporting effect. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 48, 375-379.
- Bunting S. & Campbell, J. C. (1990). Feminism and nursing: Historical perspectives. *Advances in Nursing Science*, 12(4), 11-24.
- Buzawa, E. S. & Buzawa, C. G. (1990). *Domestic violence: The criminal justice response*. Studies in Crime and Law, Volume 6. Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.
- Caesar, P. L. (1988). Exposure to violence in the families-of-origin among wife abusers in maritally non-violent men. *Violence and Victims*, 3(1), 49-63.
- Campbell, D. W., Campbell, J. C., King, C., Parker, B., & Ryan, J. (1994). The reliability and factor structure of the index of spouse abuse with African-American women. *Violence and Victims*, 9(3), 259-274.
- Campbell, J. C. (1981). Misogyny and homicide of women. *Advances in Nursing Science*, 3(2), 67-85.
- Campbell, J. C. (1984). Abuse of female partners. In J. Campbell & J. Humphrey (Eds.) *Nursing care of victims of family violence* (pp. 74-108). Reston, VA: Reston Publishing.
- Campbell, J. C. (1986). Nursing assessment for risk of homicide with battered women. *Advances in Nursing Science*, 8(4), 36-51.

- Campbell, J. C. (1989a). A test of two explanatory models of women's responses to battering. *Nursing Research*, 38(1), 18-24.
- Campbell, J. C. (1989b). Women's responses to sexual abuse in intimate relationships. *Health Care for Women International*, 8, 335-347.
- Campbell, J. C. (1992). "If I can't have you, no one can": Power and control in homicide of female partners. In J. Radford & D. E. H. Russell (Eds). *Femicide: The politics of woman killing* (pp. 99-113). Twayne Publishing: New York.
- Campbell, J. C. (1995). Homicide of and by battered women. In J. C. Campbell (Ed.). *Assessing dangerousness: Violence by sexual offenders, batterers, and child abusers* (96-113). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.
- Campbell, J. C. (1997). (Women's Response to Battering, Time 3). Unpublished raw data.
- Campbell, J. C. & Bunting, S. (1991). Voices and paradigms: Perspectives on critical and feminist theory in nursing. *Advances in Nursing Science*, 13(3), 1-15.
- Campbell, J. C. & Fishwick, N. (1993). Abuse of female partners. In J. Campbell and J. Humphrey (Eds.) *Nursing care of survivors of family violence* (pp. 68-104). St. Louis, MO: Mosby.
- Campbell, J. C., Miller, P., Cardwell, M., & Belknap, R. A. (1994). Relationship status of battered women over time. *Journal of Family Violence*, 9, 99-111.
- Chinn, P. L., & Jacobs, M. K. (1987). *Theory and nursing: A systematic approach* (2nd ed.). St. Louis, MO: C.V. Mosby Company.
- Crowne, D. P. & Marlowe, D. (1960). A new scale of social desirability independent of psycho-pathology. *Journal of Consulting Psychology*, 24(4), 349-354.
- Curtis, L. A. (1974). *Criminal violence: National patterns and behavior*. Lexington, MA: Heath.
- Denzin, N. K. (1989). *Interpretive interactionism*. (Vol. 16, Applied Social Research Methods Series). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications.

- DeVellis, R. F. (1991). *Scale development: Theory and applications*. (Vol. 26, Applied Social Research Methods Series). Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.
- Dobash, R. E. & Dobash, R. (1977-78). Wives: The 'appropriate' victims of marital violence. *Victimology: An International Journal*, 2(3-4), 426-442.
- Dobash, R. E. & Dobash, R. (1979). *Violence against wives*. New York: The Free Press.
- Dobash, R. E. & Dobash, R. (1992). *Women, violence & social change*. London: Routledge.
- Dobash, R. P., Dobash, R. E., Wilson, M., & Daly, M. (1992). The myth of sexual symmetry in marital violence. *Social Problems*, 39, 71-91.
- Drake, V. K. (1982). Battered women: A health care problem in disguise. *Image*, 14, 40-47.
- Dutton, D. G. (1988). Profiling of wife assaulters: preliminary evidence for a trimodal analysis. *Violence and Victims*, 3(1), 5-29.
- Dutton, D. G. & Hemphill, K. J. (1992). Patterns of social desirability responding among perpetrators and victims of wife assault. *Violence and Victims*, 7(1), 29-39.
- Dutton, D. G. & Painter, S. L. (1981). Traumatic bonding: The development of emotional attachments in battered women and other relationships of intermittent abuse. *Victimology: An International Journal*, 1(4), 139-155.
- Dutton, D. G. & Painter, S. (1993). Emotional attachments in abusive relationships: A test of traumatic bonding theory. *Violence and Victims*, 8(2), 105-120.
- Dutton, D. G. & Starzomski, A. J. (1993). Borderline personality in perpetrators of psychological and physical abuse. *Violence and Victims*, 8(4), 327-337.
- Edwards, S. S. M. (1989). *Policing 'domestic' violence: women, the law, and the state*. London: Sage Publications.
- Ewing, C. P. (1987). *Battered women who kill: Psychological self-defense as legal justification*. Lexington, MA: Lexington Books.

- Fagan, J. A., Stewart, D. K., & Hansen, K. V. (1983). Violent men or violent husbands? Background factors and situational correlates. In D. Finkelhor, R. J. Gelles, G. T. Hotaling, & M. A. Straus (Eds.), *The dark side of families: Current family violence research* (pp.49-68). Beverly Hills, CA: Sage Publications.
- Fawcett, J. (1984). *Analysis and evaluation of conceptual models of nursing*. Philadelphia, PA: F.A. Davis Company.
- Ferguson, G. A. & Takane, Y. (1989). *Statistical analysis in psychology and education*. (6th ed.). New York: McGraw Hill Publishing.
- Finkelhor, D. & Yllo, K. (1982, July). Forced sex in marriage. *Crime and Delinquency*, 28(3), 459-478.
- Fishwick, N. J. (1993). *Health care encounters of women in abusive relationships: A process of protecting personal integrity*. Unpublished dissertation, Case Western Reserve University, Cleveland, Ohio.
- Ford-Gilboe, M., Campbell, J. C., & Berman, H. (1995). Stories and numbers: coexistence without compromise. *Advances in Nursing Science*, 18(1), 14-26.
- Fortune, M. M. & Horman, D. (1981). Family violence: A workshop manual for clergy and other service providers. *Domestic Violence Monograph Series*, 6, Rockville, MD: National Clearing House on Domestic Violence.
- Ganley, A. (1981). *Participants manual: Court-mandated therapy for men who batter*. Washington, DC: Center for Women Policy Studies.
- Gelles, R. J. (1974). *The violent home: A study of physical aggression between husbands and wives*. Newbury Par, CA: Sage Publications.
- Gelles, R. J. (1976). Abused wives: Why do they stay? *Journal of Marriage and Family*, 38, 659-668.
- Gillespie, C. K. (1989). *Justifiable homicide: Battered women, self-defense, and the law*. Columbus, OH: Ohio State University Press.
- Gondolf, E. W. (1988). Who are these guys? Toward a behavioral typology of batterers. *Violence and Victims*, 3(3), 187-203.

- Graham, D. L. R. & Rawlings, E. I. (1991). Bonding with abusive dating partners: Dynamics of Stockholm Syndrome. In B. Levy (Ed.), *Dating violence: Young women in danger* (pp.119-135). Seattle, WA: Seal Press.
- Graham, D. L. R., Rawlings, E. I., & Rimini, N. (1988). Survivors of terror: Battered women, hostages, and the Stockholm Syndrome. In K. Yllo and M. Bograd (Eds.), *Feminist perspectives on wife abuse* (pp.217-233). Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.
- Graham, D. L. R., Rawlings, E. I., Ihms, K., Lattimer, D., Foliano, J., Thompson, A., Suttman, K., Farrington, M., & Hacker, R. (1995). A scale for identifying "Stockholm Syndrome" reactions in young dating women: Factor structure, reliability, and validity. *Violence and Victims, 10*(1), 3-22.
- Grant, C. A. (1995). Women who kill: The impact of abuse. *Issues in Mental Health Nursing, 16*, 315-326.
- Hamberger, L. K. & Hastings, J. E. (1986). Personality correlates of men who abuse their partners: A cross-validation study. *Journal of Family Violence, 1*, 323-346.
- Hamberger, L. K. & Hastings, J. E. (1990). Recidivism following spouse abuse abatement counseling: Treatment program implications. *Violence and Victims, 5*(3), 157-170.
- Hanneke, C. R., Shields, N. M., & McCall, G. J. (1981). *Patterns of family and non-family violence: An approach to the study of violent husbands*. Paper presented at the First Conference for Family Violence Research, Durham, NH.
- Hart, B. (1988). Beyond the "duty to warn": A therapist's "duty to protect" battered women and children. In K. Yllo & M. Bograd (Eds.), *Feminist perspectives on wife abuse* (pp.234-248). Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.
- Hastings, J. E. & Hamberger, L. K. (1988). Personality characteristics of spouse abuse: A controlled comparison. *Violence & Victims, 3*, 31-48.
- Helton, A. (1986). *Protocol of care for the battered woman*. Houston, TX: Houston Chapter of the March of Dimes.
- Holtzworth-Munroe, A. & Anglin, K. (1991). The competency of responses given by maritally violent versus non-violent men to problematic marital situations. *Violence and Victims, 6*(4), 257-269.

- Holtzworth-Munroe, A., Waltz, J., Jacobson, N. S., Monaco, V., Fehrenbach, P. A., & Gottman, J. M. (1992). Recruiting non-violent men as control subjects for research on marital violence: How easily can it be done? *Violence and Victims, 7*(1), 79-88.
- Hudson, W. W. (1976). Assessment and marital discord in social work practice. *Social Service Review, 50*, 293-311.
- Hudson, W. W. (1981). Index and scale construction: Client problem assessment. In R. M. Grinnell, Jr. (Ed.), *Social work research and evaluation*. Itasca, IL: F. E. Peacock Publishers.
- Hudson, W. W. (1990). *Partner abuse scale: Physical and nonphysical*. Tempe, AR: Walmyr Publishing.
- Hudson, W. W. & Murphy, G. J. (1980). The non-linear relationship between marital satisfaction and stages of the family life cycle: An artifact of Type I errors. *Journal of Marriage and the Family, 42*(May), 263-267.
- Hudson, W. W. & McIntosh, S. R. (1981). The assessment of spouse abuse: Two quantifiable dimensions. *Journal of Marriage and the Family, 43*(4), 873-885.
- Hudson, W. W. & Proctor, E. K. (1977). Assessment of depressive affect in clinical practice. *Journal of Consulting and Clinical Psychology, 45*, 1206-1207.
- Hyden, M. (1995, March). Verbal aggression as pre-history of woman battering. *Journal of Family Violence, 10*(1), 55-71.
- Imle, M. A. & Atwood, J. R. (1988). Retaining qualitative validity while gaining quantitative reliability and validity: Development of the Transition to Parenthood Concerns Scale. *Advances in Nursing Science, 11*(1), 61-75.
- Johnson, M. P. (1995, May). Patriarchal terrorism and common couple violence: Two forms of violence against women. *Journal of Marriage and the Family, 57*, 283-294.
- Jones, A. (1980). *Women who kill*. New York: Fawcett Columbine.
- Kalmuss, D. (1984, February). The inter-generational transmission of marital aggression. *Journal of Marriage and the Family, 46*, 11-19.

- Kalmuss, D. S. & Seltzer, J. A. (1986). Continuity of marital behavior in remarriage: The case of spouse abuse. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 48, 113-120.
- Kellerman, A. L. & Mercy, J. P. (1992). Men, women, and murder: Gender-specific differences in rates of fatal violence and victimization. *The Journal of Trauma*, 33(1), 1-5.
- King, C. & Ryan, J. (1997). (A study of the health care needs of abused women). Unpublished raw data.
- Knapp, T. R. (1991). Focus on psychometrics - coefficient alpha: Conceptualization and anomalies. *Research in Nursing and Health*, 14, 457-460.
- Kuhl, A. E. (1986). Implications of justifiable homicide verdicts for battered women. *RESPONSE*, 9(2), 6-10.
- Lackey, N. R., & Wingate, A. L. (1989). The pilot study. One key to research success. In P. J. Brink & M. J. Woods (Eds.), *Advanced design in nursing research*. Newbury Park, CA: Sage.
- Landenburger, K. M. (1989). The process of entrapment and recovery from an abusive relationship. *Issues in Mental Health Nursing*, 10, 209-227.
- Landenburger, K. M. (1993). Exploration of women's identity: Clinical approaches with abused women. *AWHOHNN's Clinical Issues in Perinatal and Women's Health Nursing*, 4(3), 378-384.
- Langley, R. & Levy, R. C. (1977). *Wife beating: The silent crisis*. New York: Pocket Books.
- Lichenstein, V. R. (1981, July-September). The battered woman: Guidelines for effective nursing intervention. *Issues in Mental Health Nursing*, 3, 237-250.
- Lieberknecht, K. (1978, April). Helping the battered wife. *American Journal of Nursing*, 78, 654-656.
- Limandri, B. J. & Sheridan, D. J. (1995). Prediction of intentional interpersonal violence: An introduction. In J. C. Campbell (Ed.), *Assessing dangerousness: Violence by sexual offenders, batterers, and child abusers* (pp.1-19). Thousand Oaks, CA: Sage Publications

- Lobel, K. (Ed.) (1986). *Naming the violence: Speaking out about lesbian battering*. Seattle, WA: Seal Press
- Loving, N. (1980). *Responding to spouse abuse & wife beating: A guide for police*. Washington, DC: Police Executive Research Forum.
- Marshall, L. L. (1992). Development of the Severity of Violence Against Women Scales. *Journal of Family Violence*, 7(2), 103-121.
- May, B. A. (1990). *Abused women's cognition beliefs associated with readiness to terminate the relationship*. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Oregon Health Sciences University, Portland.
- McFarlane, J., Christoffel, K., Bateman, L., Miller, V., & Bullock, L. (1991). Assessing for abuse: Self-report versus nurse interview. *Public Health Nursing*, 8, 245-250.
- McFarlane, J., Parker, B., Soeken, K., & Bullock, L. (1992). Assessing for abuse during pregnancy. *Journal of the American Medical Association*, 267(3), 3176-3178.
- Mercy, J. A. & Saltzman, L. E. (1989). Fatal violence among spouses in the United States, 1976-85. *American Journal of Public Health*, 79(5), 595-599.
- Merritt-Gray, M. & Wuest, J. (1995). Counteracting abuse and breaking free: The process of leaving revealed through women's voices. *Health Care for Women International*, 16, 399-412.
- Millon, T. (1983). *Millon Clinical Multiaxial Inventory Manual*. Minneapolis, MN: Interpretive Scoring Systems.
- Mishel, M. H. (1989). Methodological studies: Instrument development. In P. J. Brink & M. J. Wood (Eds.), *Advanced design in nursing research*. (pp. 238-284). Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.
- Moore, D. (1979). *Battered women*. Beverly Hills, CA: Sage Publications.
- Murphy, C. M., Meyer, S. L., & O'Leary, K. D. (1993). Family of origin violence and MCMI-II psycho-pathology among partner assaultive men. *Violence and Victims*, 8(2), 165-176.

- NiCarthy, G. (1982). *Getting free: A handbook for women in abusive relationships*. Seattle, WA: Seal Press.
- NiCarthy, G. (1986). *Getting free: a handbook for women in abusive relationships*. Seattle, WA: Seal Press.
- Nunnally, J. C. (1978). *Psychometric theory*. (2nd ed.). New York: McGraw Hill Publishing.
- Pagelow, M. D. (1981, December). Factors effecting women's decisions to leave violent relationships. *Journal of Family Issues*, 2, 391-414.
- Pagelow, M. D. (1984). *Family violence*. New York: Praeger Publications.
- Parker, B. & McFarlane, J. (1991). Feminist theory and nursing: An empowerment model for research. *Advances in Nursing Science*, 13(3), 59-67.
- Parker, B. & Schumacher, D. M. (1977). The battered wife syndrome and violence in the nuclear family of origin: a controlled pilot study. *American Journal of Public Health*, 67, 760-761.
- Parker, B., Ulrich, Y., Bullock, L., Campbell, D., Campbell, J., King, C., Landenburger, K., McFarlane, J., Ryan, J., Sheridan, D., Smith-McKenna, L., & Torres, S. (1990). A protocol of safety: Research on abuse of women. *Nursing Research*, 39(4), 248-250
- Patton, M. Q. (1990). *Qualitative evaluation and research methods*. (2nd ed.). Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications
- Pence, E. & Paymar, M. (1986). *Power and control: Tactics of men who batter*. Duluth, MN: Domestic Abuse Intervention Project.
- Pence, E. & Paymar, M. (1993). *Education groups for men who batter: The Duluth model*. New York: Springer.
- Pizzey, E. & Shapiro, J. (1982). *Prone to violence*. Feltham, Middlesex, England: Hamlyn Publishing.
- Polit, D. F. (1996). *Data analysis & statistics: For nursing research*. Stamford, CT: Appleton & Lange.

- Polit, D. & Hungler, B. (1983). *Nursing research: Principles and methods*. (2nd ed.). Philadelphia, PA: J. B. Lippincott Company.
- Raymond, B. & Bruschi, I. G. (1989). Psychological abuse among college women in dating relationships. *Perceptual and Motor Skills*, 69, 1283-1297.
- Rodenburg, F. A. & Fantuzzo, J. W. (1993). The Measure of Wife Abuse: Steps toward the development of a comprehensive assessment technique. *Journal of Family Violence*, 8(3), 203-228.
- Roy, M. (1977). A current survey of 150 cases. In M. Roy (Ed.). *Battered women: A psychosociological study of domestic violence*. New York: Van Nostrand Reinhold Company.
- Russell, D. E. H. (1982). *Rape in marriage*. New York, NY: MacMillan.
- Ryan, K. M. (1995). Due courtship-violent men have characteristics associated with "battering personality"? *Journal of Family Violence*, 10(1), 99-120.
- Saunders, D. G. (1986). When battered women use violence: Husband-abuse or self-defense? *Victims and Violence*, 1(1), 47-60.
- Shepard, M. F. & Campbell, J. A. (1992). The Abusive Behavior Inventory: A measure of psychological and physical abuse. *Journal of Interpersonal Violence*, 7(3), 291-305.
- Sheridan, D. J. (1993) The role of the battered women specialist. *Journal of Psychosocial Nursing*, 31(11), 31-37.
- Sheridan, D. J. (1995). Family violence. In S. Kitt, J. Selfridge-Thomas, J. A. Proehl, & J. Kaiser (Eds.) *Emergency nursing: A physiologic and clinical perspective* (2nd ed.) (pp. 482-494). Philadelphia, PA: W. B. Saunders.
- Sheridan, D. J. (1996). Forensic documentation of battered pregnant women. *Journal of Nurse-Midwifery*, 41(6), 467-472.
- Siegal, M. A., Plessler, D. R., & Jacobs, N. R., (1985). *Domestic violence: A guide on current topics*. Plano, TX: Instructional Aids, Inc.
- Simpson, A. (1995). *Mastering WordPerfect® 6.1 for Windows™*. San Francisco, CA: Sybex.

- Sonkin, D. J. (1995). *The counselor's guide to learning to live without violence*. Volcano, CA: Volcano Press.
- Sonkin, D. J. & Durphy, M. (1982). *Learning to live without violence: A handbook for men*. San Francisco, CA: Volcano Press.
- Sonkin, D. J., Martin, D., & Walker, L. E. (1985). *The male batterer: A treatment approach*. New York: Springer Publishing.
- Steinmetz, S. K. (1977-78). The battered husband syndrome. *Victimology*, 2, 499-502.
- Steinmetz, S. K. & Lucca, J. S. (1988). Husband battering. In V. B. Van Hasselt, R. L. Morrison, A. S. Bellack, & M. Hersen (Eds.), *Handbook of family violence* (pp. 233-246). New York: Plenum.
- Strahan, R. & Gerbasi, K. (1972). Short, homogeneous versions of the Marlowe-Crowne Social Desirability Scale. *Journal of Clinical Psychology*, 28, 191-193.
- Straus, M. A. (1979). Measuring intra-family conflict and violence: The Conflict Tactics (CT) Scales. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 41, 75-88.
- Straus, M. A. & Gelles, R. J. (1986). Societal change and change in family violence from 1975 to 1985 as revealed by two marital surveys. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 48, 465-479.
- Straus, M. A., Gelles, R. J., & Steinmetz, S. (1980). *Behind closed doors: Violence in the American family*. New York: Anchor Books.
- Stuart, E. P. & Campbell, J. C. (1989). Assessment of patterns of dangerousness with battered women. *Issues in Mental Health Nursing*, 10, 245-260.
- Sugarman, D. B. & Hotaling, G. T. (1989). Dating violence: Prevalence, context, and risk makers. In M. A. Pirog-Good & J. E. Stets (Eds.), *Violence in dating relationships: Emerging social issues* (pp. 3-32). New York: Praeger Publishers.
- Szinovacz, M. (1983). Using couple data as a methodological tool: The case of marital violence. *Journal of Marriage and the Family*, 45, 633-644.
- Tabachnick, B. G. & Fidell, L. S. (1989). *Using multivariate statistics*. (2nd ed.). New York: Harper & Row Publishers.

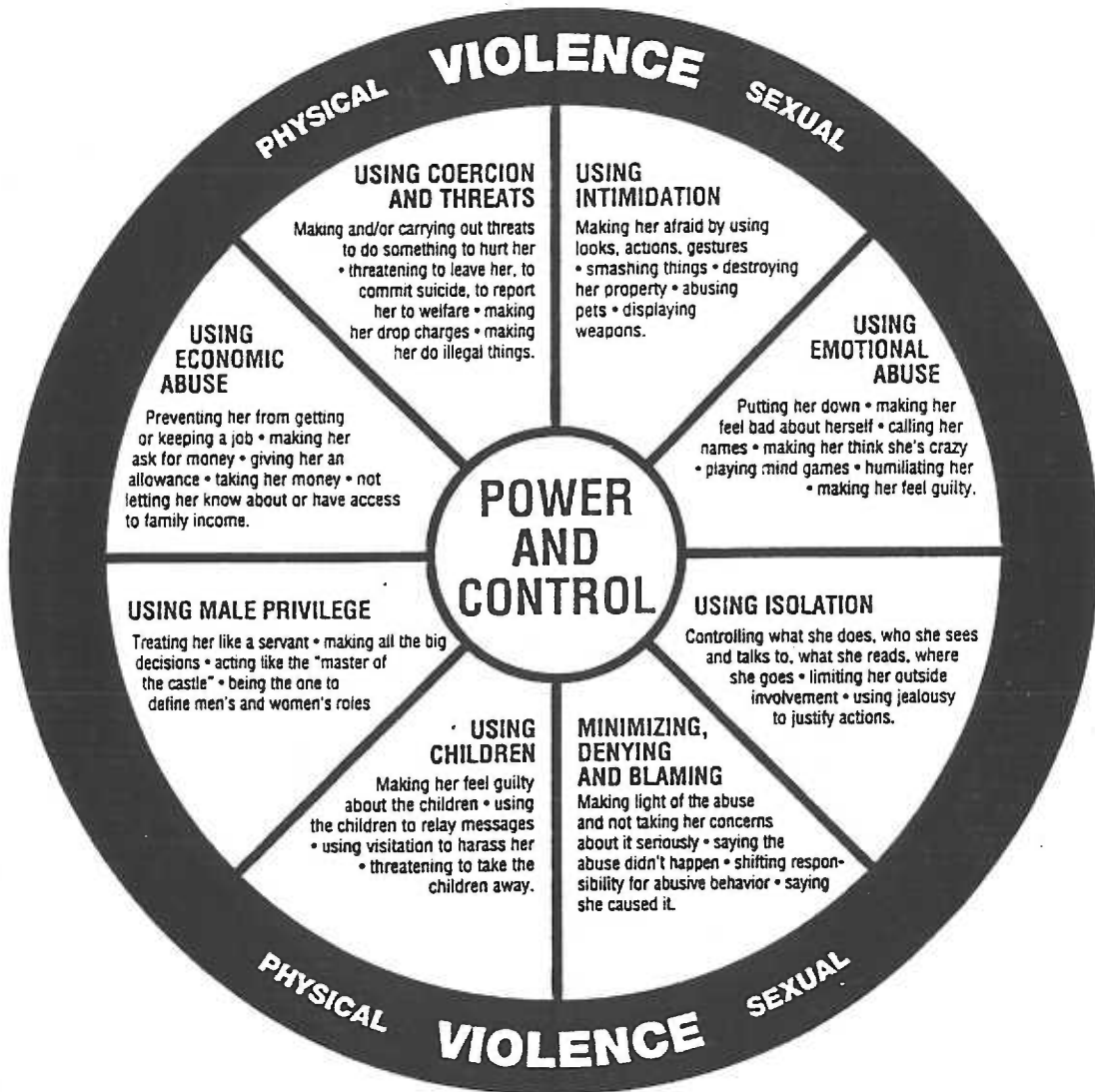
- Tabachnick, B. G. & Fidell, L. S. (1996). *Using multivariate statistics*. (3rd ed.). New York: Harper Collins College Publishers.
- Thompson, S. E. (1989). *Components of psychological abuse in female victims of domestic violence*. Unpublished doctoral dissertation, Texas Women's University, Denton, TX.
- Tolman, R. M. (1989). The development of a measure of psychological maltreatment of women by their male partners. *Violence and Victims*, 4(3), 159-177.
- Ulrich, Y. C. (1991). Women's reasons for leaving abusive spouses. *Health Care for Women International*, 12, 465-473.
- Ulrich, Y. C. (1993). What helped most in leaving spouse abuse: Implications for interventions. *AWHOHNN's Clinical Issues in Perinatal and Women's Health Nursing*, 4(3), 385-390
- U.S. Commission on Civil Rights (1978). *Battered women: Issues of public policy*. Washington, DC: United States Commission on Civil Rights.
- Walker, L. E. (1979). *The battered woman*. New York: Harper-Colophon Books.
- Walker, L. E. (1984). *The battered women syndrome*. New York: Springer Publishing.
- Walker, L. E. (1989). *Terrifying love: Why battered women kill and how society responds*. New York: Harper & Row Publishers.
- Walker, L. O. & Avant, K. D. (1983). *Strategies for theory construction in nursing*. Norwalk, CT: Appleton-Century-Crofts.
- Waltz, C. F., Strickland, O. L., Lenz, E. R. (1991). *Measurement in nursing research*. (2nd ed.). Philadelphia, PA: F. A. Davis Company.
- Wilson, M. & Daly, M. (1993). Spousal homicide risk and estrangement. *Violence and Victims*, 8(1), 3-16.
- Wilson, M., Daly, M., & Daniele, A. (1995). Familicide: The killing of spouse and children. *Aggressive Behavior*, 21, 275-291.
- Yllo, K. (1988). Political and methodological debates in wife abuse research. In K. Yllo & M. Bograd (Eds.), *Feminist perspectives on wife abuse* (pp. 28-50). Newbury Park, CA: Sage Publications.

Yoshihama, M. & Sorenson, S. B. (1994, Spring). Physical, sexual, and emotional abuse by male intimates: Experiences of women in Japan. *Violence and Victims*, 9(1), 63-77.

APPENDIX A

POWER AND CONTROL WHEEL

Source: Domestic Abuse Intervention Project
206 West Fourth Street
Duluth, MN 55806
(218) 722-4134



Domestic Abuse Intervention Project
 206 West Fourth Street
 Duluth, Minnesota 55806
 218-722-4134

APPENDIX B

CONFLICT TACTICS SCALE (CTS)

HUSBAND-WIFE FORM N

CONFLICT TACTICS SCALE - HUSBAND-WIFE FORM N

No matter how well a couple gets along, there are times when they disagree on major decisions, get annoyed about something the other person does, or just have spats or fights because they're in a bad mood or tired or for some other reason. They also use many different ways of trying to settle their differences. I'm going to read a list of some things that you and your (husband/partner) might have done when you had a dispute, and would first like you to tell me for each one how often you did it in the past year.

- | | |
|---------------|----------------------|
| 0 = Never | 4=6-10 Times |
| 1 = Once | 5=11-20 Times |
| 2 = Twice | 6=More than 20 Times |
| 3 = 3-5 Times | X=Don't Know |

Reasoning Subscale

-
- 1. Discussed the issue calmly
 - 2. Got information to back up (your/his) side of things
 - 3. Brought in or tried to bring in someone to help settle things
-

Verbal Aggression Subscale

-
- 4. Insulted or swore at the other one
 - 5. Sulked and/or refused to talk about it
 - 6. Stomped out of the room or house (or yard)
 - 7. Cried
 - 8. Did or said something to spite the other
 - 9. Threatened to hit or throw something at the other
 - 10. Threw or smashed or hit or kicked something
-

Violence Subscale

-
- 11. Threw something at the other
 - 12. Pushed, grabbed, or shoved the other
 - 13. Slapped the other one
 - 14. Kicked, bit, or hit with a fist
 - 15. Hit or tried to hit with something
 - 16. Beat up the other one
 - 17. Threatened with a knife or gun
 - 18. Used a knife or gun
 - 19. other (probe)

APPENDIX C

INDEX OF SPOUSE ABUSE (ISA)

INDEX OF SPOUSE ABUSE (ISA)

This questionnaire is designed to measure the degree of abuse you have experienced in your relationship with your partner. It is not a test. So there are no right or wrong answers. Answer each item as carefully and accurately as you can by placing a number beside each one as follows:

- 1 = Never
- 2 = Rarely
- 3 = Occasionally
- 4 = Frequently
- 5 = Very Frequently

Physical Abuse Subscale

-
- ___ 3. My partner becomes surly and angry if I tell him he is drinking too much. (15)*
 - ___ 4. My partner makes me perform sex acts that I do not enjoy or like. (50).
 - ___ 7. My partner punches me with his fists. (75)
 - ___ 13. My partner threatens me with a weapon. (82)
 - ___ 17. My partner beats me so badly that I must seek medical attention. (98)
 - ___ 22. My partner screams and yells at me. (38)
 - ___ 23. My partner slaps me around the face and head. (80)
 - ___ 24. My partner becomes abusive when he drinks. (65)
 - ___ 27. My partner acts like a bully to me. (44)
 - ___ 28. My partner frightens me. (55)
 - ___ 30. My partner acts like he would like to kill me.(80)

Nonphysical Abuse Subscale

-
- ___ 1. My partner belittles me. (1)
 - ___ 2. My partner demands obedience to his whims. (17)
 - ___ 5. My partner becomes very upset if dinner, housework or laundry is not done when he thinks it should be. (4)
 - ___ 6. My partner is jealous and suspicious of my friends. (8)
 - ___ 8. My partner tells me I am ugly and unattractive. (26)
 - ___ 9. My partner tells me I really couldn't manage or take care of myself without him. (8)
 - ___ 10. My partner acts like I am his personal servant. (20)
 - ___ 11. My partner insults or shames me in front of others. (41)
 - ___ 12. My partner becomes very angry if I disagree with his point of view. (15)
 - ___ 14. My partner is stingy in giving me enough money to run our home. (12)
 - ___ 15. My partner belittles me intellectually. (20)

- ___ 16. My partner demands that I stay home to take care of the children. (14)
- ___ 18. My partner feels that I should not work or go to school. (21)
- ___ 19. My partner is not a kind person. (13)
- ___ 20. My partner does not want me to socialize with my female friends. (18)
- ___ 21. My partner demands sex whether I want it or not. (52)
- ___ 25. My partner orders me around. (29)
- ___ 26. My partner has no respect for my feelings. (39)
- ___ 29. My partner treats me like a dunce. (29)

* (Item weights follow each question. The weights would be absent from score sheets given to respondents.)

© 1978, Sally R. McIntosh and Walter W. Hudson

APPENDIX D

DANGER ASSESSMENT (DA)

DANGER ASSESSMENT (DA)

Several risk factors have been associated with homicide (murder) of both batterers and battered women in research conducted after the killings have taken place. We cannot predict what will happen in your case, but we would like you to be aware of the danger of homicide in situations of severe battering and for you to see how many of the risk factors apply to your situation. (The he in the questions refers to your husband, partner, ex-husband, or whoever currently is physically hurting you).

A. On the attached calendar, please mark the approximate dates during the past year when you were beaten by your husband or partner. Write on the date how long each incident lasted in approximate hours and rate the incident according to the following scale:

1. Slapping, pushing; no injuries or lasting pain
2. Punching, kicking; bruises, cuts, and/or continuing pain
3. "Beating up;" severe contusions, burns, broken bones
4. Threat to use weapon; head injury, internal injury, permanent injury
5. Use of a weapon; wounds from weapon

(If any of the descriptions for the higher number apply, use the higher number).

B. Answer these questions yes or no.*

- _____ 1. Has the physical violence increased in frequency during the past year?
- _____ 2. Has the physical violence increased in severity during the past year and/or has a weapon or threat of a weapon been used?
- _____ 3. Does he ever try to choke you?
- _____ 4. Is there a gun in the house?
- _____ 5. Has he ever forced you into sex when you did not wish to have sex?
- _____ 6. Does he use drugs? (By drugs I mean "uppers" or amphetamines, speed, angel dust, cocaine, crack, street drugs, heroin, or mixtures).
- _____ 7. Does he threaten to kill you and/or do you believe he is capable of killing you?
- _____ 8. Is he drunk every day or almost everyday? (in terms of quantity of alcohol)
- _____ 9. Is he a binge drinker? ^a
- _____ 9.(a) Does he control most of your daily activities? (For instance, does he tell you who you can be friends with, how much money you can take with you shopping, or when you can take the car?) (If he tries but you don't let him, check here _____).

- _____ 10. Have you ever been beaten by him while you were pregnant? (If never pregnant by him, check here _____).
- _____ 11. Is he violently jealous of you? (For instance, does he say, "If I can't have you, no one can").
- _____ 12. Have you ever threatened or tried to commit suicide?
- _____ 13. Has he ever threatened or tried to commit suicide?
- _____ 14. Is he violent outside the home?

_____ TOTAL YES ANSWERS

Thank you. Please Talk With Your Nurse, Advocate, Or Counselor About What The Danger Assessment Means In Terms Of Your Situation.

^a (A question commonly seen on various versions of the DA, "Is he violent towards your children?" was not used in this study because of IRB concerns of mandatory reporting to child abuse authorities. Question 9 - Is he a binge drinker? was substituted in this study.)

© 1995, Jacquelyn C. Campbell

APPENDIX E

PSYCHOLOGICAL MALTREATMENT OF WOMEN INVENTORY (PMWI)

PSYCHOLOGICAL MALTREATMENT OF WOMEN INVENTORY (PMWI)

Women's Scale Items - (Complete Set)

Answer each item as carefully and accurately as you can by placing a number beside each one as follows:

- 1 = Never
- 2 = Rarely
- 3 = Sometimes
- 4 = Frequently
- 5 = Very Frequently

- ___ 1. My partner put down my physical appearance.
- ___ 2. My partner insulted me or shamed me in front of others.
- ___ 3. My partner treated me like I was stupid.
- ___ 4. My partner was insensitive to my feelings.
- ___ 5. My partner told me I couldn't manage or take care of myself without him.
- ___ 6. My partner put down my care of the children.
- ___ 7. My partner criticized the way I took care of the house.
- ___ 8. My partner said something to spite me.
- ___ 9. My partner brought up something from the past to hurt me.
- ___ 10. My partner called me names.
- ___ 11. My partner swore at me.
- ___ 12. My partner yelled and screamed at me.
- ___ 13. My partner treated me like an inferior.
- ___ 14. My partner sulked or refused to talk about a problem.
- ___ 15. My partner stomped out of the house or yard during an argument.
- ___ 16. My partner gave me the silent treatment or acted as if I wasn't there.
- ___ 17. My partner withheld affection from me.
- ___ 18. My partner did let me talk about my feelings.
- ___ 19. My partner was insensitive to my sexual needs and desires.
- ___ 20. My partner demanded obedience to his whims.
- ___ 21. My partner became upset if dinner, housework, or laundry was not done when he thought it should be.
- ___ 22. My partner acted like I was his personal servant.
- ___ 23. My partner did not do a fair share of the household tasks.
- ___ 24. My partner did not do a fair share of child care.
- ___ 25. My partner ordered me around.
- ___ 26. My partner monitored my time and made me account for where I was.
- ___ 27. My partner was stingy in giving me money to run our home.

- ___ 28. My partner acted irresponsibly with our financial resources.
- ___ 29. My partner did not contribute enough to supporting our family.
- ___ 30. My partner used our money or made important financial decisions without talking to me about it.
- ___ 31. My partner kept me from getting care that I needed.
- ___ 32. My partner was jealous or suspicious of my friends.
- ___ 33. My partner was jealous of other men.
- ___ 34. My partner did not want me to go to school or other self-improvement activities.
- ___ 35. My partner did not want me to socialize with my female friends.
- ___ 36. My partner accused me of having an affair with another man.
- ___ 37. My partner demanded that I stay home and take care of the children.
- ___ 38. My partner tried to keep me from seeing or talking with my family.
- ___ 39. My partner interfered in my relationships with other family members.
- ___ 40. My partner tried to keep me from doing things to help myself.
- ___ 41. My partner restricted my use of the car.
- ___ 42. My partner restricted my use of the telephone.
- ___ 43. My partner did not allow me to go out of the house when I wanted to.
- ___ 44. My partner refused to let me work outside of the home.
- ___ 45. My partner told me my feelings were irrational or crazy.
- ___ 46. My partner blamed me for his problems.
- ___ 47. My partner tried to turn our family, friends, and children against me.
- ___ 48. My partner blamed me for causing his violent behavior.
- ___ 49. My partner tried to make me feel like I was crazy.
- ___ 50. My partner's moods changed radically, from calm to angry, or vice versa.
- ___ 51. My partner blamed me when he was upset about something, even when it had nothing to do with me.
- ___ 52. My partner tried to convince my friends, family and children that I was crazy.
- ___ 53. My partner threatened to hurt himself if I left him.
- ___ 54. My partner threatened to hurt himself if I didn't do what he wanted.
- ___ 55. My partner threatened to have an affair with someone else.
- ___ 56. My partner threatened to leave the relationship.
- ___ 57. My partner threatened to take the children away from me.
- ___ 58. My partner threatened to have me committed to a mental institution.

APPENDIX F
PARTNER ABUSE SCALE: PHYSICAL (PASP)

PARTNER ABUSE SCALE: PHYSICAL (PASP)

This questionnaire is designed to measure the degree of abuse you have experienced in your relationship with your partner. It is not a test. So there are no right or wrong answers. Answer each item as carefully and accurately as you can by placing a number beside each one as follows:

- 1 = Never
- 2 = Very Rarely
- 3 = A Little of the Time
- 4 = Some of the Time
- 5 = A Good Part of the Time
- 6 = Very Frequently
- 7 = All of the Time

- _____ 1. My partner physically forces me to have sex.
- _____ 2. My partner pushes or shoves me violently.
- _____ 3. My partner hits or punches my arms and body.
- _____ 4. My partner threatens me with a weapon.
- _____ 5. My partner beats me so hard that I need medical help.
- _____ 6. My partner slaps my face and head.
- _____ 7. My partner beats me when he drinks.
- _____ 8. My partner makes me afraid for my life.
- _____ 9. My partner physically throws me.
- _____ 10. My partner hits and punches my face and head.
- _____ 11. My partner beats my face so badly, I am ashamed to be seen.
- _____ 12. My partner acts like he would like to kill me.
- _____ 13. My partner threatens to cut or stab me.
- _____ 14. My partner tries to choke or strangle me.
- _____ 15. My partner knocks me down, kicks, or stomps me.
- _____ 16. My partner twists my fingers, arms, or legs.
- _____ 17. My partner throws dangerous objects at me.
- _____ 18. My partner bites or scratches me so badly that I bleed or bruise.
- _____ 19. My partner violently pinches or twists my skin.
- _____ 20. My partner badly hurts me when having sex.
- _____ 21. My partner injures my breasts or genitals.
- _____ 22. My partner tries to suffocate me.
- _____ 23. My partner pokes or jabs me with pointed objects.
- _____ 24. My partner has broken one or more of my bones.
- _____ 25. My partner kicks my face and head.

APPENDIX G

PARTNER ABUSE SCALE: NONPHYSICAL (PASNP)

PARTNER ABUSE SCALE: NONPHYSICAL (PASNP)

This questionnaire is designed to measure the degree of abuse you have experienced in your relationship with your partner. It is not a test. So there are no right or wrong answers. Answer each item as carefully and accurately as you can by placing a number beside each one as follows:

- 1 = Never
- 2 = Very Rarely
- 3 = A Little of the Time
- 4 = Some of the Time
- 5 = A Good Part of the Time
- 6 = Very Frequently
- 7 = All of the Time

- _____ 1. My partner belittles me.
- _____ 2. My partner demands to his whims.
- _____ 3. My partner becomes angry if I say you are drinking too much.
- _____ 4. My partner demands I perform sex acts that I do not like.
- _____ 5. My partner becomes upset if my work is not done and he thinks it should be.
- _____ 6. My partner does not want me to have any male friends.
- _____ 7. My partner tells me I am ugly and unattractive.
- _____ 8. My partner tells me I couldn't manage or care for myself without him.
- _____ 9. My partner acts like I am his personal servant.
- _____ 10. My partner insults or shames me in front of others.
- _____ 11. My partner becomes very angry if I disagree with his point of view.
- _____ 12. My partner is stingy in giving me money.
- _____ 13. My partner belittles me intellectually.
- _____ 14. My partner demands that I stay home.
- _____ 15. My partner feels that I should not work or go to school.
- _____ 16. My partner does not want me to socialize with my female friends.
- _____ 17. My partner demands sex whether I want it or not.
- _____ 18. My partner screams and yells at me.
- _____ 19. My partner shouts and screams at me when he drinks.
- _____ 20. My partner orders me around.
- _____ 21. My partner has no respect for my feelings.
- _____ 22. My partner acts like a bully towards me.
- _____ 23. My partner frightens me.
- _____ 24. My partner treats me like a dunce.
- _____ 25. My partner is surly and rude to me.

APPENDIX H

SEVERITY OF VIOLENCE AGAINST WOMEN SCALES (SVAWS)

SEVERITY OF VIOLENCE AGAINST WOMEN SCALES (SVAWS)

During the past year, you and your partner have probably experienced anger or conflict. Below is a list of behaviors your partner may have done during the past 12 months. Describe how often your partner has done each behavior by writing a number from the following scale.

- 1 = Never
 2 = Once
 3 = A few times
 4 = Many times

Student Version

Symbolic Violence

- ___ 1. How often has your partner hit or kicked a wall, door, or furniture?
 ___ 2. How often has your partner threw, smashed or broke an object?
 ___ 3. How often has your partner drove dangerously with you in the car?
 ___ 4. How often has your partner thrown an object at you?

Threats of Mild Violence

- ___ 5. How often has your partner shook a finger at you?
 ___ 6. How often has your partner made threatening gestures or faces at you?
 ___ 7. How often has your partner shook a fist at you?
 ___ 8. How often has your partner acted like a bully towards you?

Threats of Moderate Violence

- ___ 9. How often has your partner destroyed something belonging to you?
 ___ 10. How often has your partner threatened to harm or damage things you care about?
 ___ 11. How often has your partner threatened to destroy property?
 ___ 12. How often has your partner threatened someone you care about?

Threats of Serious Violence

- 13. How often has your partner threatened to hurt you?
 - 14. How often has your partner threatened to kill himself?
 - 15. How often has your partner threatened you with a club-like object?
 - 16. How often has your partner threatened you with a knife or a gun?
 - 17. How often has your partner threatened to kill you?
 - 18. How often has your partner threatened you with a weapon?
 - 19. How often has your partner acted like he wanted to kill you?
-

Mild Violence

- 20. How often has your partner held you down, pinning you in place?
 - 21. How often has your partner pushed or shoved you?
 - 22. How often has your partner shook or roughly handled you?
 - 23. How often has your partner grabbed you suddenly or forcefully?
-

Minor Violence

- 24. How often has your partner scratched you?
 - 25. How often has your partner pulled your hair?
 - 26. How often has your partner twisted your arm?
 - 27. How often has your partner spanked you?
 - 28. How often has your partner bit you?
-

Moderate Violence

- 29. How often has your partner slapped you with the palm of his hand?
- 30. How often has your partner slapped you with the back of his hand?
- 31. How often has your partner slapped you around your face or head?

Serious Violence

- 32. How often has your partner kicked you?
 - 33. How often has your partner hit you with an object?
 - 34. How often has your partner stomped on you?
 - 35. How often has your partner choked you?
 - 36. How often has your partner punched you?
 - 37. How often has your partner burned you with something?
 - 38. How often has your partner used a club-like object on you?
 - 39. How often has your partner beat you up?
 - 40. How often has your partner used a knife or gun on you?
-

Sexual Violence

- 41. How often has your partner demanded sex whether you wanted to or not?
- 42. How often has your partner made you have oral sex against your will?
- 43. How often has your partner made you have sexual intercourse against your will?
- 44. How often has your partner physically forced you to have sex?
- 45. How often has your partner made you have anal sex against your will?
- 46. How often has your partner used an object on you in a sexual way?

APPENDIX I

ABUSIVE BEHAVIOR INVENTORY (ABI)

ABUSIVE BEHAVIOR INVENTORY (ABI)

Here is a list of behaviors that many women report have been used by their partners or former partners. We would like you to estimate how often these behaviors occurred during the six months prior to your beginning this program. Your answers are strictly confidential.

CIRCLE a number of each of the items listed below to show your closest estimate of how often it happened in your relationship with your partner or former partner during the six months before he started the program.

- 1 = Never
- 2 = Rarely
- 3 = Occasionally
- 4 = Frequently
- 5 = Very Frequently

Physical Abuse Subscale: Women's Version

- 7. Pushed, grabbed or shoved you.
- 14. Slapped, hit, or punched you.
- 18. Pressured you to have sex in a way that you didn't like or want.
- 21. Spanked you.
- 25. Kicked you.
- 26. Physically forced you to have sex.
- 27. Threw you around.
- 28. Physically attacked the sexual parts of your body.
- 29. Choked or strangled you.
- 30. Used a knife, gun, or other weapon against you.

Psychological Abuse Subscale: Women's Version

- 1. Called me names and criticized me.
- 2. Tried to keep me from doing something I wanted to do (example: going out with friends, going to meetings).
- 3. Gave me angry stares or looks.
- 4. Prevented me from having money for my own use.
- 5. Ended a discussion with me and made the decision himself.
- 6. Threatened to hit or throw something at me.
- 8. Put down my family and friends.

9. Accused me of paying too much attention to someone or something else.
10. Put me on an allowance.
11. Used the children to threaten me (example: told me that I would lose custody; said he would leave town with the children).
12. Became very upset with me because dinner, housework, or laundry was not ready when he wanted done or done the way he thought it should be.
13. Said things to scare me (example: told me something "bad" would happen; threatened to commit suicide).
15. Made me do something humiliating or degrading (example: begging for forgiveness, having to ask his permission to use the car or do something).
16. Checked up on me (examples: listened to my phone calls; checked the mileage on my car; called me repeatedly at work).
17. Drove recklessly when I was in the car.
19. Refused to do housework or child care.
20. Threatened me with a knife, gun, or other weapon.
22. Told me I was a bad parent.
23. Stopped me or tried to stop me from going to work or school.
24. Threw, hit, kicked, or smashed something.

APPENDIX J

MEASURE OF WIFE ABUSE (MWA)

MEASURE OF WIFE ABUSE (MWA)

Please, write in the number of times your partner did these actions to you during the past six months, or during the last six months of the time you and your partner were together. Also please circle one answer for how hurt or upset you were by each action. If your partner did not do these actions, please write a zero in the blank space.

Physical Abuse Items

For each item please indicate the number of times this happened in the last six months. Also indicate how much this hurt or upset you by the following scale:

This Never Hurt or Upset Me

This Rarely Hurt or Upset Me

This Sometimes Hurt or Upset Me

This Often Hurt or Upset Me

- 24. Your partner kicked you.
- 45. Your partner shook you.
- 38. Your partner threw you on the furniture.
- 49. Your partner pushed you.
- 22. Your partner punched you.
- 4. Your partner threw objects at you.
- 36. Your partner hit you with a belt.
- 13. Your partner bit you.
- 60. Your partner whipped you.
- 18. Your partner scratched you with fingernails.
- 54. Your partner shot you with a gun.
- * 7. Your partner slapped you.
- *15. Your partner burned your hair.
- *31. Your partner stabbed you with a knife.
- *56. Your partner choked you.

*Deleted from one factor analysis by the authors to try to increase instrument precision.

Sexual Abuse Items

-
- 11 Your partner put foreign objects in your vagina.
 - 20. Your partner tried to rape you.
 - 46. Your partner forced you to have sex with other partners.
 - 37. Your partner raped you.
 - 55. Your partner forced you to do unwanted sex acts.
 - 14. Your partner held you down and cut your pubic hair.
 - 43. Your partner prostituted you.

- 48. Your partner treated you as a sex object.
- 9. Your partner squeezed your breasts.
- 42. Your partner took porno pictures of you.
- 12. Your partner mutilated your genitals.
- 47. Your partner forced you to have sex with animals.
- *2. Your partner squeezed your pelvis.
- * 5. Your partner kneed you in the genital area.
- *53. Your partner ripped your clothing off.

*Deleted from one factor analysis by the authors to try to increase instrument precision.

Psychological Abuse Items

-
- 26. Your partner stole your possessions.
 - 27. Your partner took your car keys.
 - 21. Your partner took your wallet leaving you stranded.
 - 29. Your partner disabled your car.
 - 3. Your partner imprisoned you in your house.
 - 19. Your partner locked you in the bedroom.
 - 39. Your partner harassed you over the telephone.
 - 58. Your partner stole food or money from you.
 - 16. Your partner harassed you at work.
 - 40. Your partner hung around outside your home.
 - 50. Your partner followed you.
 - 8. Your partner locked you out of your home.
 - 57. Your partner turned off the electricity.
 - 25. Your partner kidnaped your children.
 - 34. Your partner attempted suicide.

Verbal Abuse Items

-
- 28. Your partner told you that no one would ever want you.
 - 44. Your partner told you that you weren't good enough.
 - 41. Your partner told you that you were a horrible wife.
 - 59. Your partner told you that you were ugly.
 - 52. Your partner told you that you were stupid.
 - 10. Your partner told you that you were crazy.
 - 32. Your partner called you a bitch.
 - 30. Your partner told you that you were lazy.
 - 6. Your partner called you a whore.
 - 35. Your partner called you a cunt.
 - 23. Your partner told you he was going to kill you.
 - 51. Your partner told you he was going to kill your parents or family.

__ 33. Your partner told you he was going to take away your children.

__ 17. Your partner told you he would kill your children.

__ *1. Your partner screamed at you.

*Deleted from one factor analysis by the authors to try to increase instrument precision.

© 1993 Frances A. Rodenburg and John W. Fantuzzo

APPENDIX K

45-ITEM PILOT HARASS MEASURE (HARASS)

Harassment in

Abusive

Relationships:

A

Self-report

Scale

Many women are harassed in relationships with their abusive male partners, especially if the women are trying to end the relationship. You may be experiencing harassment. This instrument is a student project designed to measure harassment of women who are in abusive relationships or who have been trying to get out of abusive relationships. By completing this questionnaire, you may be helping other women understand harassment in their lives.

Harassment is defined as a persistent pattern of behavior by a male intimate partner that is intended to bother, annoy, trap, threaten, frighten, and/or terrify you in order to control your behavior.

There are no right or wrong answers. Do not put your name on the form. The instrument takes about 15 minutes to complete.

Thank you

Copyright 1992 Daniel J. Sheridan, MS, RN
COPYRIGHT 1996
503-494-7267

FOR EACH ITEM, CIRCLE THE NUMBER THAT BEST DESCRIBES HOW OFTEN THE BEHAVIOR HAS OCCURRED. THEN RATE HOW DISTRESSING THE BEHAVIOR IS TO YOU. IF THE BEHAVIOR HAS NEVER OCCURRED, CIRCLE NEVER (0) AND GO TO THE NEXT QUESTION.

| THE BEHAVIOR | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|---|--|---|
| | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly 2 = Moderately 3 = Very 4 = Extremely Distressing |
| MY PARTNER | | |
| (Circle one) | | |
| MY FORMER PARTNER | | |
| (1) uses my family or friends to pressure me to stay in the relationship. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (2) scares me with a weapon. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (3) falsely accuses me of child abuse. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (4) threatens to harm our pet. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (5) intentionally harms our pet. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (6) threatens to harm the kids if I leave him. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (7) bothers me at work when I don't want to talk to him. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (8) threatens to have the kids taken away from me. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (9) tries to get me fired from my job. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (10) messes with my car (for example: cuts the tires, breaks the windshield). | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (11) destroys my property (for example: breaks my furniture, rips up my clothes). | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (12) threatens to kill himself if I leave him. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |

| FOR EACH ITEM, CIRCLE THE NUMBER THAT BEST DESCRIBES HOW OFTEN THE BEHAVIOR HAS OCCURRED. THEN RATE HOW DISTRESSING THE BEHAVIOR IS TO YOU. IF THE BEHAVIOR HAS NEVER OCCURRED, CIRCLE NEVER (0) AND GO TO THE NEXT QUESTION. | | |
|---|--|---|
| THE BEHAVIOR | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
| | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly 2 = Moderately 3 = Very 4 = Extremely Distressing |
| MY PARTNER | | |
| (Circle one) | | |
| MY FORMER PARTNER | | |
| (13) calls me on the phone and hangs up. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (14) follows me. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (15) tries getting money from me. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (16) tries to stop me from seeing other people. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (17) threatens to snatch the kids if I leave him. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (18) comes to my home when I don't want him there. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (19) ignores court orders to stay away from me. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (20) takes my property (for example: checks, food stamps, car, jewelry, VCR, TV). | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (21) frightens my family. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (22) uses the kids as pawns to get me physically close to him. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (23) uses his friends or family to send me threatening messages. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |

FOR EACH ITEM, CIRCLE THE NUMBER THAT BEST DESCRIBES HOW OFTEN THE BEHAVIOR HAS OCCURRED. THEN RATE HOW DISTRESSING THE BEHAVIOR IS TO YOU. IF THE BEHAVIOR HAS NEVER OCCURRED, CIRCLE NEVER (0) AND GO TO THE NEXT QUESTION.

| THE BEHAVIOR | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|---|--|---|
| | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly 2 = Moderately 3 = Very 4 = Extremely Distressing |
| MY PARTNER | | |
| MY FORMER PARTNER (Circle one) | | |
| (24) leaves notes on my car. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (25) threatens to kill me if I leave or stay away from him. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (26) buys me or sends me things that I don't want. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (27) gets himself in crises to keep me near him. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (28) shows up without warning. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (29) makes me feel like he can again force me into sex. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (30) sends me threatening letters. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (31) breaks into my home. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (32) sits in his car outside my home. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (33) pretends to be someone else in order to get to me. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (34) frightens my friends. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (35) keeps showing up wherever I am. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |

FOR EACH ITEM, CIRCLE THE NUMBER THAT BEST DESCRIBES HOW OFTEN THE BEHAVIOR HAS OCCURRED. THEN RATE HOW DISTRESSING THE BEHAVIOR IS TO YOU. IF THE BEHAVIOR HAS NEVER OCCURRED, CIRCLE NEVER (0) AND GO TO THE NEXT QUESTION.

| THE BEHAVIOR | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|--|--|---|
| | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly 2 = Moderately 3 = Very 4 = Extremely Distressing |
| MY PARTNER | | |
| MY FORMER PARTNER | (Circle one) | |
| (36) takes things that belong to me so I have to see him to get them back. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (37) agrees to pay certain bills, then doesn't pay them. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (38) plays games with the child support check. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (39) interferes with my efforts to go to school. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (40) uses his connections to make my life difficult. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (41) reports me to the authorities for taking drugs when I don't. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (42) tells other people that I am crazy. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (43) leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (44) sold things I own without my consent. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (45) refuses to grant me a divorce. | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |

FOR EACH ITEM, CIRCLE THE NUMBER THAT BEST DESCRIBES HOW OFTEN THE BEHAVIOR HAS OCCURRED. THEN RATE HOW DISTRESSING THE BEHAVIOR IS TO YOU. IF THE BEHAVIOR HAS NEVER OCCURRED, CIRCLE NEVER (0) AND GO TO THE NEXT QUESTION.

| THE BEHAVIOR | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|--|--|---|
| | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly 2 = Moderately 3 = Very 4 = Extremely Distressing |
| MY PARTNER | | |
| MY FORMER PARTNER | (Circle one) | |
| LIST OTHER BEHAVIORS THAT YOU HAVE EXPERIENCED. CIRCLE HOW OFTEN AND HOW DISTRESSING THE BEHAVIORS ARE TO YOU. | | |
| (46) _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (47) _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (48) _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (49) _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| (50) _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| Please answer a few additional questions. | | |
| Your age in years. _____ | | |
| Check the statement that best describes you? | | |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Asian/Pacific Islander <input type="checkbox"/> Black/African American <input type="checkbox"/> Caucasian/White <input type="checkbox"/> Hispanic <input type="checkbox"/> Native American/American Indian | | |
| Check the statement that best describes you. | | |
| <input type="checkbox"/> I am presently living in an abusive relationship and I am being harassed by a male intimate partner. <input type="checkbox"/> I have been out of an abusive relationship for less than one year and I am being harassed by my former male intimate partner. <input type="checkbox"/> I have been out of an abusive relationship for more than one year and I am being harassed by my former male intimate partner. <input type="checkbox"/> I am no longer being harassed. | | |
| How long have (had) you been in the above relationship? _____ years. | | |

Check the statement that best describes you.
 Married, living with an abusive male partner.
 Single, living with an abusive male partner.
 Married, living apart from an abusive male partner.
 Single, living apart from an abusive male partner.

APPENDIX L

SUMMARY OF CAMPBELL'S (1997) *WOMEN'S RESPONSE
TO BATTERING - TIME 3* STUDY USED IN THE
SECONDARY DATA ANALYSIS
FOR THIS DISSERTATION

SUMMARY OF CAMPBELL'S (1997) *WOMEN'S RESPONSE*
TO BATTERING - TIME 3 STUDY USED IN THE
SECONDARY DATA ANALYSIS
FOR THIS DISSERTATION

Campbell's Setting, Sample, and Procedure

At Time 1 of Campbell's study, 141 women who were having serious problems in an intimate relationship with a man for at least a year were recruited to participate through newspaper advertisements and bulletin board postings in the metropolitan area of a major Midwestern city in 1990-93. The purpose of the study was threefold: (1) to develop a model of women's physical, emotional, and behavioral responses to battering over time; (2) to further develop the DA as a clinical and research instrument that explores the risk of homicide; and (3) to test the model developed in the initial purpose.

A goal of this longitudinal study was to interview these women at three points in time over approximately 3 years. Because of concern for their safety, many women were never called at home, rather they were contacted through work or a family member or friends. Although 34% ($n = 48$) of the overall sample was lost by Time 3 due to safety issues and transience, there were no significant differences in demographic or major predictor and outcome variables (abuse, stress, self care agency, self esteem, depression, health symptoms) between those who returned and those who did not. Women at Time 3 completed for the third time the DA ($n = 33$) (Campbell, 1986) and the ISA ($n = 75$) (McIntosh & Hudson, 1978) if they felt abused and/or in danger. At Time 3 the HARASS instrument was added and completed by 93 women. At each time point, the women also participated in an in-depth interview.

The methodology was enacted as feminist action research (Henderson, 1995), combining in-depth structured, semi-structured and open-ended interview questions with items from measurement instruments. The total appointment time lasted approximately 2 hours, with a dialogic interview that included safety planning and referrals as desired by the participants. Women were asked about the preferred ethnicity of their interviewer at the initial interview and matched with their preference (African-American or Anglo) if possible. Women were interviewed by the same member of the research team at each interview unless a last-minute change in the woman's schedule necessitated a different interviewer. All women at Time 1 were screened and found to be positive for abuse during the prior year by scores on the CTS plus the addition of a question on forced sex that was modified from earlier work by Russell (1982). The coercive control aspects of the relationship were determined in the in-depth interview. Women were not asked to define themselves as abused or battered.

Sample size for Time 1 of Campbell's study was determined by utilizing a minimum of 5:1 subject-to-parameter ratio for latent variable models using maximum likelihood estimates. The tested model had 24 parameters to be estimated, thus a minimum sample of 120 was needed. The sample for the original study consisted of 141 women. In the original sample, the average age of the women was 31.4 years; they were relatively well educated (56% with a high school education or more), and had an

average of 2.2 children. Twenty-two percent had no children. Approximately 21% were legally married, but they were all currently in a problematic, sexually intimate relationship with a man, which had lasted from 1 to 35 years ($M = 8.3$). The women were economically heterogeneous (average total family income of \$16,748), but a majority were poor with 58% having a family income of \$10,000 per year or less. Almost exactly half (49.6%) were unemployed, but the other half covered the full range of occupational categories, with 12% holding jobs in professional occupations. In terms of ethnicity, 109 (79%) described themselves as African-American, 10 (7.1%) as Anglo American, 14 (9.9%) as European American (strongly identifying with a European ethnicity, primarily Polish), 1 (.7%) Mexican-American, 1 (.7%) Asian-American, 1 (.7%) Arab-American, and 5 (3.5%) other or mixed. This ethnic distribution and the general demographic profile is close to the demographic characteristics of women in the large Midwestern city from which the sample was drawn.

APPENDIX M

SUMMARY OF KING AND RYAN'S (1997) *A STUDY OF THE HEALTH
CARE NEEDS AND EXPERIENCES OF ABUSED WOMEN*
USED IN THE SECONDARY DATA ANALYSIS
FOR THIS DISSERTATION

SUMMARY OF KING AND RYAN'S (1997) *A STUDY OF THE HEALTH CARE NEEDS AND EXPERIENCES OF ABUSED WOMEN*
USED IN THE SECONDARY DATA ANALYSIS
FOR THIS DISSERTATION

King and Ryan's Setting, Sample, and Procedure

Between October, 1995 and December, 1996, King and Ryan (1997), conducted *A Study of the Health Care Needs and Experiences of Abused Women*. The purpose of their study was to determine the health problems for which abused women identify, report, and seek help from nurses, in particular, and health providers in general. The study sought to provide answers to six research questions about abused women's experiences with health providers of which two research questions are relevant to this dissertation study: the level of abuse and the level of harassment. Using a convenience sample of abused women recruited from domestic violence shelters in Massachusetts and Vermont, 51 women participated in semi-structured, tape-recorded, guided interviews about their experiences and expectations of and from health providers. In addition, each participant completed two instruments, the ISA and the HARASS, plus demographic information.

The study sought to provide answers to the following questions:

1. What are the health problems that abused women identify which result directly or indirectly from their abuse?
2. What are the factors that motivate abused women to seek help from health care providers?
3. What is the perception of the help received from nurses and other health providers?
4. What interventions do women desire from nurses and other health providers?
5. What is the level of abuse being experienced by the women?
6. What is the level of harassment being experienced by the women?

APPENDIX N

54-ITEM HARRASS MEASURE

H A R A S S

H arassment in
A busive
R elationships:
A
S elf-report
S cale

Many women are harassed in relationships with their abusive male partners, especially if the women are trying to end the relationship. You may be experiencing harassment.

This instrument is a student project designed to begin measuring harassment in abusive relationships. By completing this questionnaire, you may be helping other women understand harassment in their relationships.

Harassment is defined as a persistent, intentional pattern of behavior by a male intimate partner that is intended to bother, annoy, trap, threaten, frighten, and/or terrify you in order to control your behavior.

There are no right or wrong answers. Do not put your name anywhere on the form. The instrument takes about 15 minutes to complete.

Thank You

FOR EACH ITEM BELOW CIRCLE THE NUMBER THAT BEST DESCRIBES HOW OFTEN THE BEHAVIORS HAVE OCCURRED AND HOW THESE BEHAVIORS MAKE YOU FEEL. IF THE BEHAVIOR HAS NEVER OCCURRED, CIRCLE NEVER AND GO TO THE NEXT QUESTION.

THE BEHAVIOR: _____ HOW OFTEN: _____ HOW DO THESE BEHAVIORS MAKE YOU FEEL? _____

0 = Never
 1 = Rarely
 2 = Occasionally
 3 = Frequently
 4 = Very Frequently

1 = Bothered
 2 = Annoyed
 3 = Trapped
 4 = Threatened
 5 = Frightened
 6 = Terrified

CIRCLE ONE - MY PARTNER:

MY FORMER PARTNER

- | | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|------|--|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| (1) | uses my family to pressure me to stay in the relationship | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (2) | scares me with a weapon. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (3) | falsely accuses me of child abuse. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (4) | sabotages my efforts to find work. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (5) | threatens to harm our pet. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (6) | has intentionally harmed our pet. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (7) | has threatened to harm the kids if I leave. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (8) | calls me at work when I don't want to talk with him. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (9) | threatens to have the kids taken away from me. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (10) | tries to sabotage my job. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (11) | messes with my car (eg. slashes the tires, breaks the windshield). | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (12) | destroys my property (eg. breaks my furniture, rips up my clothes). | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (13) | threatens to kill himself if I leave. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (14) | calls me and hangs up on the phone. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (15) | stalks me in his car. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (16) | keeps showing up where I am. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (17) | sabotages my efforts to date other people. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (18) | threatens to snatch the kids. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (19) | comes to my home when I don't want him to. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (20) | ignores court orders to not have contact with me. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (21) | has stolen my property (eg. takes my checks, TV, jewelry, VCR). | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (22) | tries to get money from me. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (23) | follows me everywhere I go. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (24) | uses the kids as pawns to get me physically close to him. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (25) | uses his friends or family to send me threatening messages. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (26) | leaves notes on my car. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (27) | threatens to kill me if I leave or stay away from him. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (28) | buys me things that I don't want. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (29) | gets himself in crises' to keep me near him. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (30) | loans me money but with strings attached. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (31) | finds excuses to occupy almost all my time. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (32) | makes me feel paranoid. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (33) | appears without warning. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (34) | has forced me into sex before and now his behavior makes me feel like it could happen again. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (35) | malls me threatening letters. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |

FOR EACH ITEM BELOW CIRCLE THE NUMBER THAT BEST DESCRIBES HOW OFTEN THE BEHAVIORS HAVE OCCURRED AND HOW THESE BEHAVIORS MAKE YOU FEEL. IF THE BEHAVIOR HAS NEVER OCCURRED, CIRCLE NEVER AND GO TO THE NEXT QUESTION.

| THE BEHAVIOR: | HOW OFTEN: | HOW DO THESE BEHAVIORS MAKE YOU FEEL? |
|---------------|---------------------|---------------------------------------|
| | 0 = Never | 1 = Bothered |
| | 1 = Rarely | 2 = Annoyed |
| | 2 = Occasionally | 3 = Trapped |
| | 3 = Frequently | 4 = Threatened |
| | 4 = Very Frequently | 5 = Frightened |
| | | 6 = Terrified |

CIRCLE ONE - MY PARTNER:

MY FORMER PARTNER

| | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|------|--|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| (36) | has broken into my house. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (37) | sits in his car outside my home. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (38) | pretends to be someone else in order to get to me. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (39) | intimidates my friends. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (40) | intimidates my family. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (41) | takes things that belong to me so I have to go see him to get them back. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (42) | spoil the kids to make me look like a mean mother. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (43) | agrees to pay certain bills then doesn't pay them. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (44) | refuses to pay child support. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (45) | sabotages my efforts to go to school. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (46) | uses his connections to make my life difficult. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (47) | reports me to the authorities for taking drugs when I don't. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (48) | sabotages my efforts to use birth control. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (49) | sabotages my efforts to have safe sex. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (50) | tells other people that I am crazy. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (51) | leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (52) | sold things I own without my consent. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (53) | tells the kids that I'm a bad mother. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (54) | refuses to grant me a divorce. | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |

PLEASE WRITE IN ANY ADDITIONAL BEHAVIORS THAT YOU HAVE EXPERIENCED AND CIRCLE HOW OFTEN AND HOW THESE BEHAVIORS MAKE YOU FEEL.

| | | | | | | | | | | | | |
|------|--|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| (55) | | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (56) | | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (57) | | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (58) | | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (59) | | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |
| (60) | | 0 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 1 | 2 | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 |

APPENDIX O

WAYNE STATE UNIVERSITY INSTITUTIONAL APPROVAL
FOR CAMPBELL'S STUDY



Wayne State University

Multiple Assurance #M1261
IRB # 01

Human and Animal Investigation Committees
540 E. Canfield Avenue
Detroit, Michigan 48201
(313) 577-1628

Protocol # H 6-6-90-PR /or
Amendment# _____

To: Dr. J Campbell, Department of Nursing

FROM: Human Investigation Committee

DATE: June 11, 1991

Your research proposal entitled, Women's Responses to
Battering - 2nd Phase

submitted to NIH on June, 1991

has been reviewed favorably and the consent form approved by Wayne State University's Human Investigation Committee at its meeting of June 6, 1991 as required under provisions of D.H.H.S. Regulation 45 CFR 46 (as amended) and/or other pertinent federal regulations to assure that the rights of human subjects have been protected.

Since the Human Investigation Committee has not evaluated your proposal for scientific merit except to weigh the risk to the human subjects in relation to potential benefits, this approval does not replace nor serve in place of any departmental or other approvals which may be required.

As Wayne State University's Institutional Review Board, the Human Investigation Committee is in compliance with the requirements in part 56, Subchapter D, Part 312 of the 21 Code of Federal Regulations published January 27, 1981; revised March 8, 1983.

If investigational devices/drugs are to be used, then this approval WILL NOT BECOME EFFECTIVE until authorization from the Food and Drug Administration (IDE/IND Number) is on hand.

Lawrence M. Weiner, Ph.D.
Chairman
Human Investigation Committee

cc: R. Healy, ORSPS

CONSENT FORM

Name of Study: WOMEN'S RESPONSES TO RELATIONSHIP PROBLEMS

Investigator: Jacquelyn C. Campbell, PhD, RN
Wayne State University
College of Nursing
321 Cohn Building
Detroit, Michigan 48202
(313) 577-0204 or (313) 577-4193

You are being asked to participate in a research study on Women's Responses to relationship problems. The purpose of this study is to learn more about how women respond to problems they are having in a marriage (or any other significant, intimate relationship with a man). It is important to identify factors which influence how women behave and feel in this kind of situation, so that health professionals can better understand what women are experiencing. Your participation in this study will help nurses to know how to help women deal with their responses to relationship problems.

If you agree to participate in this research study, you will be filling out several forms with questions about your relationship and you as a person. You will also be interviewed about you and your relationship. We think it will take you about two hours to answer all the written and interview questions. After you have completed the first interview, we would like for you to return for a second interview about six months later and then for a third interview about six months after the second one.

You can ask any questions you would like about the study or the people involved at any time. We will answer all your questions. In addition, you can receive information on resources available to help you with your relationship problems if you are interested. You may also learn more about what your answers to the questions you answer mean, but you will have to stay a little while longer while we score the questionnaires. You can leave a message at one of the telephone numbers listed above for the investigator who will return your call to answer questions you have about the study after this session. You can also receive a copy of the research results when they are completed if you are interested.

The answers that you give us to the questions are confidential. Only the investigator and the interviewers will have access to the data collected. Your name will not be used in anything that we discuss or write about the research. You are free to choose not to participate or to withdraw from the study at any time. If you withdraw from the study, any information collected before that time will be destroyed.

CONSENT FORM
WOMEN'S RESPONSES TO RELATIONSHIP PROBLEMS

In the unlikely event of any injury resulting from the research, no reimbursement, compensation, or free medical treatment is offered by Wayne State University.

If you have any questions regarding your rights as a research participant, you may contact Dr. L. M. Weiner, chairperson of the Human Investigation Committee of Wayne State University at 577-1628.

I have had opportunity to have my questions answered about the Women's Responses to Relationship Problems research study and I agree to participate. I understand I will be paid \$15.00 for completing the first interview, \$10.00 for completing the second, and \$15.00 for completing the third interview.

I will receive a copy of this consent form.

Participant Signature: _____ Date: _____

Jacquelyn C. Campbell, PhD, RN
Principal Investigator



Wayne State University
College of Nursing

3557 Cass Avenue
Detroit, Michigan 48202
(313) 577-4085

CONSENT FORM

Investigator: Jacquelyn C. Campbell, PhD, RN
Wayne State University
(313) 577-4193 or (313) 577-0204

The purpose of this research study on women's health has been explained to me, and I have had a chance to ask questions.

I understand that:

1. Participation in this study is completely voluntary.
2. I can withdraw at any time without explanation.
3. If I have any questions about the study, I can ask them at any time during the study or I can call the phone numbers above.
4. The questionnaires and interview will take approximately two hours to complete.
5. My answers will be kept confidential within the limits of the law.
6. In the event of any injury resulting from the research, no reimbursement, compensation or free medical care is offered by Wayne State University.
6. I will receive a copy of this form.

Participant
signature _____

Date _____

Investigator
signature _____

Principal Investigator

APPENDIX P

UNIVERSITY OF MASSACHUSETTS, AMHERST INSTITUTIONAL
APPROVAL FOR KING AND RYAN'S STUDY

UNIVERSITY OF MASSACHUSETTS, AMHERST
INSTITUTIONAL APPROVAL FOR KING AND RYAN'S STUDY

A STUDY OF THE HEALTH CARE NEEDS AND EXPERIENCES OF ABUSED WOMEN

I am _____, a nurse and a research assistant for Dr. Christine King and Dr. Josephine Ryan who are also nurses and teachers at the University of Massachusetts at Amherst. I am here to explain a research study to you that we would like you to participate in. The purpose of this study is to find out more about how being physically or emotionally hurt by a partner affects your health. We are also interested in your perceptions of the responses you have received from nurses and other health care providers.

If you agree to participate in this study, first I will interview you and ask you questions about your relationship with this partner, the effect of this abuse on your health, and your perceptions of the responses you have received from health care providers. This will take approximately 40 minutes and will be tape recorded. Then you will be given two short questionnaires to fill out. They ask questions about the types of abuse you have experienced from this partner and the level of harassment you are subjected to from him. These questions will take about 15 minutes to complete.

Participation in this study is voluntary. You can choose not to participate or drop out at any time by telling me you want to quit. All your answers are strictly confidential. Your name will not be used in anything that we discuss or write about the

research. An ID # will be used on all questionnaires and tapes rather than your name.

No harm will occur to you as a result of your participation in this study.

The benefits of participating in this study include being able to discuss your personal health and how abuse has affected your health. In addition, the information you share may help nurses and other professionals learn more about how to help women who are experiencing violence in their relationships. After you have completed the interview and the 2 questionnaires you will receive \$10.00 for your time and participation.

Do you have any questions?

I have a consent form to read and sign.

University of Massachusetts at Amherst
School of Nursing

TO: *JK* Professors Ryan & King
FROM: *JK* Christine King, Chair Human Subjects Review Committee
SUBJECT: Research Proposal
DATE: 9 February, 1993

The committee is pleased to announce its approval of your study entitled Health Care Needs of Abused Women. We wish you success on this interesting research.



UNIVERSITY OF MASSACHUSETTS
AT AMHERST

School of Nursing
279

Arnold House
Amherst, MA 01003
Phone: (413) 545-2703
FAX: (413) 545-0086

CONSENT FORM

Investigator: Josephine Ryan, RN, Associate Professor
University of Massachusetts at Amherst
School of Nursing
Amherst, MA 01003
Office Phone: 413-545-5085

Research Assistant: Geneva Pedersen RN

Title of Study: A Study of the Health Care Needs of Abused Women

You are being asked to participate in an investigation which will throw light on the health care needs of abused women and how nurses can best help them. The purpose of this research study is to find out more about how being physically or emotionally hurt by a partner affects your health. We are especially interested in your health and whether or not you feel your health is/was being affected by how he is/was treating you. We are also interested in your perceptions of the health care responses you have received. The results of this research can help nurses and other professionals know how to be more helpful to women who are having difficult times with their partners or husbands.

If you agree to participate in this study, first we will interview you and ask you questions about your relationship with this partner, the effect of this abuse on your health, and your perceptions of the responses you have received from health care providers. This will take about approximately 40 minutes. This interview will be tape recorded. No one, other than the research team, will ever know how you answered any of the questions about yourself and your health. Then you will be given two short questionnaires to fill out. They ask questions about the types of abuse you have experienced from this partner and the level of harassment you are subjected to from this partner. These questionnaires will take about 15 minutes to complete. You will receive \$10.00 for your participation.

No harm will occur to you as a result of your participation in this study. The benefits include being able to discuss your personal health and how abuse has affected your health. In addition, the information you share may help nurses and other professionals learn more about how to help women who are experiencing violence in their relationships.

Participation in this study is voluntary. If you do not wish to participate you can drop out at any time by telling me you want to quit. All of your answers are strictly confidential. Confidentiality and anonymity will be maintained by using numerical codes on the interview tape and questionnaires. Your name will not appear on the tape or questionnaires. Tapes and written materials will be kept by the researchers in locked files and destroyed upon completion of the study. Any written or oral reports resulting from the study will be reported anonymously with no identifying information. You can be assured that no one will know how you answered any of the questions or what we talked about.

If you have any questions about the study I will be happy to answer them. If you wish to discuss any aspect of the study or to see a summary of the results please contact us at the University of Massachusetts, 413-545-5085. One copy of this consent form is for you to keep.

Signature of the Participant

Date

Signature of the Researcher

Date

APPENDIX Q

OHSU IRB MEMO EXEMPTING DISSERTATION STUDY
FROM FULL INSTITUTIONAL REVIEW

OREGON HEALTH SCIENCES UNIVERSITY
 Research Support Office (RSO), L106 (503) 494-7887

MEMO

Date: December 11, 1997
To: Daniel Sheridan, , SN-FAM,
From: Richard T. Jones, MD, PhD, Chair Institutional Review Board, L106
 Leslie Bevan, PhD, Director Research Support Office, L106
Subject: 4743
Measuring Harassment of Abused women: A Nursing Concern

Special Communication

- The RSO has not received a response to the request made on _____ for revisions of the above protocol/consent form. These were due in the RSO on _____.
- The attached advertisement has been approved as presented. Any changes to this advertisement must be submitted to the RSO for IRB approval.
- The IRB reviewed the attached advertisement on _____. The following changes will need to be made before approval is given. ¹
- The above study involves only discarded tissues/samples that do not include *identifiable private data/information obtained in a form associable with an individual*. Therefore, the study does not require IRB review.
- The above study meets the criteria for waiver of consent.
- This study is exempt based on criteria category # 2 _____.

¹ see appended copy for suggested editing

APPENDIX R

23-ITEM REDESIGNED HARASS MEASURE

Harassment in

Abusive

Relationships:

A

Self-report

Scale

Many women are harassed in relationships with their abusive partners, especially if the women are trying to end the relationships. You may be experiencing harassment. This instrument is designed to measure harassment of women who are in abusive relationships or are in the process of leaving abusive relationships. By completing this questionnaire, you may better understand harassment in your life. If you have any questions, please talk with the service provider who gave you this tool.

Harassment is defined as a persistent pattern of behavior by an intimate partner that is intended to bother, annoy, trap, emotionally wear down, threaten, frighten, terrify and/or coerce a woman with the overall intent to control her choices and behavior about leaving the abusive relationship.

There are no right or wrong answers. Do not put your name on the form. The instrument takes about 10 minutes to complete.

For each item, circle the number that best describes how often the behavior occurred. Next, rate how distressing the behavior is to you. If the behavior has never occurred, circle 0 (NEVER) and go to the next question. If the question does not apply to you, circle NA (NOT APPLICABLE). If you are still in the relationship please circle below MY PARTNER. If you have left the relationship, please circle below MY FORMER PARTNER.

| | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|---|---|--|
| | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently NA = Not applicable | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly distressing 2 = Moderately distressing 3 = Very distressing 4 = Extremely Distressing NA = Not applicable |
| THE BEHAVIOR | | |
| MY PARTNER/FORMER PARTNER (circle one) | | |
| 1. Frightens people close to me | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 2. Pretends to be someone else in order to get to me | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 3. Comes to my home when I don't want him there | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 4. Threatens to kill me if I leave or stay away from him | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 5. Threatens to harm the kids if I leave or stay away from him | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 6. Takes things that belong to me so I have to see him to get them back | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 7. Tries getting me fired from my job | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 8. Ignores court orders to stay away from me | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 9. Keeps showing up wherever I am | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 10. Bothers me at work when I don't want to talk with him | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 11. Uses the kids as pawns to get me physically close to him | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 12. Shows up without warning | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |

| THE BEHAVIOR | | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|--------------|--|---|--|
| | | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently NA = Not applicable | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly distressing 2 = Moderately distressing 3 = Very distressing 4 = Extremely Distressing NA = Not applicable |
| 13. | Messes with my property (for example: sells my stuff breaks my furniture, damages my car, steals my things) | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 14. | Scares me with a weapon | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 15. | Breaks into my home | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 16. | Threatens to kill himself if I leave or stay away from him | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 17. | Makes me feel like he can again force me into sex | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 18. | Threatens to snatch or have the kids taken away from me | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 19. | Sits in his car outside my home | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 20. | Leaves me threatening messages (for example: puts scary notes on the car, sends me threatening letters, sends me threats through family and friends, leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine) | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 21. | Threatens to harm our pet | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 22. | Calls me on the telephone and hangs up | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 23. | Reports me to the authorities for taking drugs when I don't | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |

Optional:

List other harassing behaviors that you have experienced. Circle how often and how distressing the behaviors are to you.

| THE BEHAVIOR | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|--------------|--|---|
| 24. _____ | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly distressing 2 = Moderately distressing 3 = Very distressing 4 = Extremely Distressing |
| 25. _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| 26. _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |

Please answer a few additional questions:

_____ Your age in years

Check the statement that best describes you.

Married, living with an abusive partner.

Single, living with an abusive partner.

Married, living apart from an abusive partner.

Single, living apart from an abusive partner.

How long were you in the above relationship? _____

Are you still in the relationship? YES NO

If you have left the relationship, how long have you been out? _____

What is your approximate annual income? _____

How many years of school have you completed? _____

Check the statement that best describes you.

Asian/Pacific Islander

Black/African American

Caucasian/White

Hispanic

Native American/American Indian

Other _____

APPENDIX S

THE ROLE OF WOMEN IN THE CYCLE OF LEAVING: QUALITATIVE FINDINGS FROM WOMEN EXPERIENCING HARASSMENT IN THE PROCESS OF LEAVING ABUSIVE RELATIONSHIPS

THE ROLE OF WOMEN IN THE CYCLE OF LEAVING: QUALITATIVE
FINDINGS FROM WOMEN EXPERIENCING HARASSMENT
IN THE PROCESS OF LEAVING ABUSIVE RELATIONSHIPS

The preliminary qualitative findings highlighted below are similar to the findings from Thompson's (1989) qualitative dissertation study on the components of psychological abuse, especially when describing the process of believing/not believing abuse and how women become aware of abuse. There were seven categories of behaviors that the women appeared to experience as they became aware of the abuse in their lives and then progressed through a cycle of leaving. These behaviors include: (a) Believing and not believing what the abusers said to them; (b) promises of improved behavior and having those promises repetitively broken; (c) catching on and confronting the abusers' lies; (d) excusing/permitting abusive behavior to not excusing /not permitting abusive behavior; (e) not being believed by others to being believed by others; (f) having little to no social support to having good social support; (g) feeling very unsafe to leave to feeling safe enough to leave. Brief excerpts from the qualitative transcripts highlight the cycle of leaving.

During the courtship process, the women described their hopes for life-long, wonderful relationships. Key to their hopes was believing the dreams of a better life that she and her intimate partner shared. Over time, at the other end of this continuum was not believing anything told to her by her abuser.

Believing <-----> Not Believing

Believing

We had plans to get married...So he was telling me, "Oh we'll go live in Seattle...then we'll go to Alaska and maybe go to Reno and maybe Hawaii for a honeymoon...And I believed him...."

Not Believing

He'd make up one lie after another lie...just lying as he went...

Confronted, over time, with multiple lies, misrepresentations, and obvious exaggerations, the women were reluctant to relinquish their beliefs and hopes and fantasies that their men would change. Especially, when the men made repeated promises to change.

Promises <-----> Broken Promises

Promises

He probably wants to get better and he made me believe he was really going at it, to get counseling and help himself...

Broken Promises

but he didn't do it...

This dynamic process of promises and broken promises seemed to move an abused woman from having suspicions that her abuser was being less than truthful; to reluctantly accepting that he was lying to her; to confronting him with "reality." It was after this confrontation that women described an escalation in his abusive tactics.

Catching On <-----> Confronting

Catching On

(Initially), I believed him...and then I kind of had a suspicion that he was married...and I asked him about it and he said he wasn't married and that it was just his mother trying to ruin whatever he has doing because she never liked him...

Confronting

...so I made up a story...and he finally broke down and told me he was married...he was getting real abusive right after that...telling me to stay in the house...

...I found out he went to see his baby being born in the hospital and he told me to stay in the house while he ripped the phone out of the wall and locked me in the house...and I was so scared because he told me to, he just flipped out and changed into a different person and started cussing at me and saying, "You damn bitch, you sit right there and you fuckin'... don't leave or else I'll kill you."

Becoming aware of the patterns of abuse required the passage of time. Initially, the women gave excuses for and rationalized the abusers' behaviors. Awareness was keener when the women were in a safe(r) situation and could look back in time. This appeared to be a key process in moving her from excusing/permitting the behaviors to not excusing/not permitting the patterns of abuse.

Excusing/Permitting <-----> Not Excusing/Not Permitting

Excusing

What I learned from all of them (former abusive boyfriends) that how they was brought up that effected them all.

Permitting

Yeah, he's been kind of controlling me. And I've seen myself like letting him do that too, because I used to take that from the other three that I went out with.

Not Excusing

I really believed it was me...I never realized it was him until we were married five years...

Not Permitting

I want to move and go to school and stuff and in order to go to school I can't have a boyfriend like always arguing with me, keeping me out and banging on the doors in the middle of the night...that will interfere with my education.

Following this period of self-awareness, it seems that for women to contemplate leaving, it was crucial that others believe them. This validation process seemed critical as a precursor to her seeking safety within family or friendship social support systems.

Being believed <-----> Not Being Believed

Being believed

I called my friend over here and spend the night just so someone would believe me too. Because I don't think anyone believes you much until you have proof. My friend was in here and he was banging on the door...

Not being believed

*(Was he using other people to ...)
That's what he's doing right now with my aunt (trying to get her to believe and side with him).*

Trying to leave the relationship without a support system or people willing to be there and take a risk was quite difficult. Support systems provided a safety net not otherwise present.

Support <-----> Safety
 Lack of Support <-----> Lack of Safety

Support

...the sergeant went to my house and took my husband (a police officer) down to the police department...so, I ended up down at the police station with this other girlfriend of mine...

Safety

and I was sitting there and I was talking to a Lieutenant, some kind of investigator...It's all down on this sheet of paper because I was a little upset. My girlfriend was taking all these notes...

Lack of Support

I know he's going to panic out when I move (out) and wonder where I'm out to and go and harass my family...

I'm just going on instincts because each time I try to break up with him; he's always right there telling me "All I want to do is love you." And then he'll switch and then be mean.

Lack of Safety

He told me he'd kill my family if I ever broke up with him...

Oh, if you want to be enemies, we'll be enemies then. You'll see what'll happen...And just, he looks at me real trippy...He told me he'd kill my family if I ever broke up with him.

In all of these interviews, the concepts of time and cultural awareness were very important. The following excerpts are exemplars of time and of Native American culture and the culture of being the battered wife of a police officer.

Time

Well I've been harassed in every relationship I had. The first one, I was very young, I was seventeen years old, well actually I was sixteen, going on seventeen...

He would be very controlling in, in certain ways and then he'd stop controlling in those areas and then start somewhere else...The problems would change over the years...

Culture

And I usually go to all the Pow Wow's and he came over that morning and said, "Go to the Pow Wow." ...I told him...I couldn't go and he came over the next day and said, "How come you didn't go to the Pow Wow? How come you just sit there..." Just like glamorizing that he went to the Pow Wow...I didn't go when I had two kids and it was real cold outside and they were both sick...

And he got up, pushed me down the stairs and slammed the basement door on my hand and ... it broke the skin...he'd just ripped the skin off with the door...And then I went up to the hospital where my friend met me...She called the police department and my husband is a Chicago Police Officer, so a minimum rank of a sergeant would have to come out, a regular police officer cannot handle this...

APPENDIX T

23-ITEM REDESIGNED HARASS MEASURE WITH MODIFIED PRONOUNS
FOR USE WITH ABUSED LESBIANS OR BATTERED MEN

Harassment in

Abusive

Relationships:

A

Self-report

Scale

Many people are harassed in relationships with their abusive partners, especially if they are trying to end the relationships. You may be experiencing harassment. This instrument is designed to measure harassment of people who are in abusive relationships or are in the process of leaving abusive relationships. By completing this questionnaire, you may better understand harassment in your life. If you have any questions, please talk with the service provider who gave you this tool.

Harassment is defined as a persistent pattern of behavior by an intimate partner that is intended to bother, annoy, trap, emotionally wear down, threaten, frighten, terrify and/or coerce a person with the overall intent to control choices and behavior about leaving the abusive relationship.

There are no right or wrong answers. Do not put your name on the form. The instrument takes about 10 minutes to complete.

For each item, circle the number that best describes how often the behavior occurred. Next, rate how distressing the behavior is to you. If the behavior has never occurred, circle 0 (NEVER) and go to the next question. If the question does not apply to you, circle NA (NOT APPLICABLE). If you are still in the relationship please circle below MY PARTNER. If you have left the relationship, please circle below MY FORMER PARTNER.

| | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|--|---|--|
| | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently NA = Not applicable | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly distressing 2 = Moderately distressing 3 = Very distressing 4 = Extremely Distressing NA = Not applicable |
| THE BEHAVIOR | | |
| MY PARTNER/FORMER PARTNER (circle one) | | |
| 1. | Frightens people close to me | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 2. | Pretends to be someone else in order to get to me | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 3. | Comes to my home when I don't want her there | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 4. | Threatens to kill me if I leave or stay away from her | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 5. | Threatens to harm the kids if I leave or stay away from her | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 6. | Takes things that belong to me so I have to see her to get them back | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 7. | Tries getting me fired from my job | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 8. | Ignores court orders to stay away from me | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 9. | Keeps showing up wherever I am | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 10. | Bothers me at work when I don't want to talk with her | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 11. | Uses the kids as pawns to get me physically close to her | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 12. | Shows up without warning | 0 1 2 3 4 NA 0 1 2 3 4 NA |

| THE BEHAVIOR | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|--|--|--|
| <p>0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently NA = Not applicable</p> | <p>0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly distressing 2 = Moderately distressing 3 = Very distressing 4 = Extremely Distressing NA = Not applicable</p> | |
| 13. Messes with my property (for example: sells my stuff, breaks my furniture, damages my car, steals my things) | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 14. Scares me with a weapon | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 15. Breaks into my home | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 16. Threatens to kill herself if I leave or stay away from her | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 17. Makes me feel like she can again force me into sex | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 18. Threatens to snatch or have the kids taken away from me | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 19. Sits in her car outside my home | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 20. Leaves me threatening messages (for example: puts scary notes on the car, sends me threatening letters, sends me threats through family and friends, leaves threatening messages on the telephone answering machine) | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 21. Threatens to harm our pet | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 22. Calls me on the telephone and hangs up | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |
| 23. Reports me to the authorities for taking drugs when I don't | 0 1 2 3 4 NA | 0 1 2 3 4 NA |

Optional:

List other harassing behaviors that you have experienced. Circle how often and how distressing the behaviors are to you.

THE BEHAVIOR

| | HOW OFTEN DOES IT OCCUR? | HOW DISTRESSING IS THIS BEHAVIOR TO YOU? |
|-----------|--|---|
| 24. _____ | 0 = Never 1 = Rarely 2 = Occasionally 3 = Frequently 4 = Very Frequently | 0 = Not at all distressing 1 = Slightly distressing 2 = Moderately distressing 3 = Very distressing 4 = Extremely Distressing |
| 25. _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |
| 26. _____ | 0 1 2 3 4 | 0 1 2 3 4 |

Please answer a few additional questions:

____ Female _____ Male
____ Your age in years

Check the statement that best describes you.

- Married, living with an abusive partner.
- Single, living with an abusive partner.
- Married, living apart from an abusive partner.
- Single, living apart from an abusive partner.

Check the statement that best describes you.

- Asian/Pacific Islander
- Black/African American
- Caucasian/White
- Hispanic
- Native American/American Indian
- Other _____

How long were you in the above relationship? _____

Are you still in the relationship? YES NO

If you have left the relationship, how long have you been out? _____

What is your approximate annual income? _____

How many years of school have you completed? _____